

# **PLEASANT WORDS FROM THE GOSPEL**

## **Harun Yahya (Adnan Oktar)**

### **Back Cover**

#### **About the Author**

Adnan Oktar, who writes under the pen-name Harun Yahya, was born in Ankara in 1956. Since the 1980s, the author has published many books on faith-related, scientific and political issues. He is well-known as the author of important works disclosing the imposture of evolutionists, their invalid claims, and the dark liaisons between Darwinism and such bloody ideologies as fascism and communism.

All of the author's works share one single goal: to convey the Qur'an's message, encourage readers to consider basic faith-related issues such as God's existence and unity and the Hereafter; and to expose irreligious systems' feeble foundations and perverted ideologies. His more than 300 works, translated into 63 different languages, enjoy a wide readership across the world.

By the will of God, the books of Harun Yahya will be a means through which people in the twenty-first century will attain the peace, justice, and happiness promised in the Qur'an.

# To the Reader

- I A special chapter is assigned to the collapse of the theory of evolution because this theory constitutes the basis of all anti-spiritual philosophies. Since Darwinism rejects the fact of Creation-and therefore, Allah's existence-over the last 150 years it has caused many people to abandon their faith or fall into doubt. It is therefore an imperative service, a very important duty to show everyone that this theory is a deception. Since some readers may find the opportunity to read only one of our books, we think it appropriate to devote a chapter to summarize this subject.
- I All the author's books explain faith-related issues in light of Qur'anic verses, and invite readers to learn Allah's words and to live by them. All the subjects concerning Allah's verses are explained so as to leave no doubt or room for questions in the reader's mind. The books' sincere, plain, and fluent style ensures that everyone of every age and from every social group can easily understand them. As a result of their effective, lucid narrative, they can be read at one sitting. Even those who rigorously reject spirituality are influenced by the facts these books document and cannot refute the truthfulness of their contents.
- I This and all the other books by the author can be read individually, or discussed in a group. Readers eager to profit from the books will find discussion very useful, letting them relate their reflections and experiences to one another.
- I In addition, it will be a great service to Islam to contribute to the publication and reading of these books, written solely for the pleasure of Allah. The author's books are all extremely convincing. For this reason, to communicate true religion to others, one of the most effective methods is encouraging them to read these books.
- I We hope the reader will look through the reviews of his other books at the back of this book. His rich source material on faith-related issues is very useful, and a pleasure to read.
- I In these books, unlike some other books, you will not find the author's personal views, explanations based on dubious sources, styles that are unobservant of the respect and reverence due to sacred subjects, nor hopeless, pessimistic arguments that create doubts in the mind and deviations in the heart.

[WWW.HARUNYAHYA.COM](http://WWW.HARUNYAHYA.COM) -[HTTP://EN.HARUNYAHYA.TV/](http://EN.HARUNYAHYA.TV/)

# HARUN YAHYA (ADNAN OKTAR)

## PLEASANT WORDS FROM THE GOSPEL

### **ABOUT THE AUTHOR**

Now writing under the pen-name of HARUN YAHYA, Adnan Oktar was born in Ankara in 1956. Having completed his primary and secondary education in Ankara, he studied fine arts at Istanbul's Mimar Sinan University and philosophy at Istanbul University. Since the 1980s, he has published many books on political, scientific, and faith-related issues. Harun Yahya is well-known as the author of important works disclosing the imposture of evolutionists, their invalid claims, and the dark liaisons between Darwinism and such bloody ideologies as fascism and communism.

Harun Yahya's works, translated into 72 different languages, constitute a collection for a total of more than 55,000 pages with 40,000 illustrations.

His pen-name is a composite of the names Harun (*Aaron*) and Yahya (*John*), in memory of the two esteemed Prophets who fought against their peoples' lack of faith. The Prophet's seal on his books' covers is symbolic and is linked to their contents. It represents the Qur'an (the Final Scripture) and the Prophet Muhammad (pbuh), last of the prophets. Under the guidance of the Qur'an and the Sunnah (teachings of the Prophet [saas]), the author makes it his purpose to disprove each fundamental tenet of irreligious ideologies and to have the "last word," so as to completely silence the objections raised against religion. He uses the seal of the final Prophet (saas), who attained ultimate wisdom and moral perfection, as a sign of his intention to offer the last word.

All of Harun Yahya's works share one single goal: to convey the Qur'an's message, encourage readers to consider basic faith-related issues such as Allah's existence and unity and the Hereafter; and to expose irreligious systems' feeble foundations and perverted ideologies.

Harun Yahya enjoys a wide readership in many countries, from India to America, England to Indonesia, Poland to Bosnia, Spain to Brazil, Malaysia to Italy, France to Bulgaria and Russia. Some of his books are available in English, French, German, Spanish, Italian, Portuguese, Urdu, Arabic, Albanian, Chinese, Swahili, Hausa, Dhivehi (spoken in Maldives), Russian, Serbo-Croat (Bosnian), Polish, Malay, Uygur Turkish, Indonesian, Bengali, Danish and Swedish.

Greatly appreciated all around the world, these works have been instrumental in many people recovering faith in Allah and gaining deeper insights into their faith. His books' wisdom and sincerity, together with a distinct style that's easy to understand, directly affect anyone who reads them. Those who seriously consider these books, can no longer advocate atheism or any other perverted ideology or materialistic philosophy, since these books are characterized by rapid effectiveness, definite results, and irrefutability. Even if they continue to do so, it will be only a sentimental insistence, since these books refute such ideologies from their very foundations. All contemporary movements of denial are now ideologically defeated, by means of the books written by Harun Yahya.

This is no doubt a result of the Qur'an's wisdom and lucidity. The author modestly intends to serve as a means in humanity's search for Allah's right path. No material gain is sought in the publication of these works.

Those who encourage others to read these books, to open their minds and hearts and guide them to become more devoted servants of Allah, render an invaluable service.

Meanwhile, it would only be a waste of time and energy to propagate other books that create confusion in people's minds, lead them into ideological confusion, and that clearly have no strong and precise effects in removing the doubts in people's hearts, as also verified from previous experience. It is impossible for books devised to emphasize the author's literary power rather than the noble goal of saving people from loss of faith, to have such a great effect. Those who doubt this can readily see that the sole aim of Harun Yahya's books is to overcome disbelief and to

disseminate the Qur'an's moral values. The success and impact of this service are manifested in the readers' conviction.

One point should be kept in mind: The main reason for the continuing cruelty, conflict, and other ordeals endured by the vast majority of people is the ideological prevalence of disbelief. This can be ended only with the ideological defeat of disbelief and by conveying the wonders of Creation and Qur'anic morality so that people can live by it. Considering the state of the world today, leading into a downward spiral of violence, corruption and conflict, clearly this service must be provided speedily and effectively, or it may be too late.

In this effort, the books of Harun Yahya assume a leading role. By the will of Allah, these books will be a means through which people in the twenty-first century will attain the peace, justice, and happiness promised in the Qur'an.

# Contents

## **FOREWORD: A STATEMENT REGARDING THE MUSLIM**

### **PERSPECTIVE ON THE TORAH AND THE GOSPEL 18**

### **LOVE OF GOD AND THE CONCEPT OF LOVE OF WHICH GOD APPROVES ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL 22**

### **FEAR OF GOD ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL ....36**

### **PURE FAITH IN GOD ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL 42**

To Serve God Alone Without Ascribing Equals to Him 43

To Live for God's Approval Alone.....45

To Shun the Superstitious Rites and Religion of the Ancestors 51

### **THE ONENESS OF GOD ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL 52**

### **THE TITLES OF GOD ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL 56**

That God is the Creator of All Things.....57

That God is Eternal and Timeless.....59

That God Sees, Hears and Knows All.....60

That God Knows the Secret Aspects of All Things 61

That God is Almighty.....62

That God is the Only Lord of Power and Will ...65

That God is the Only One Worthy of Praise. ....68

That God Kills and Resurrects.....70

That God is the Provider.....71

That God is All-Loving, Endower and Compassionate 72

That God Watches Over and Protects His Servants 75

That God Leads to the True Path and Cleanses Spiritual Pollution 77

That God Accepts Repentance and Forgives Sins 78

That God is the Best of Judges and the Infinitely Just	80
<b>BELIEF IN THE HEREAFTER ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL</b>	<b>82</b>
Belief in Resurrection.....	83
Belief in the Day of Judgment.....	84
Belief in the Last Day .....	90
Belief in Paradise.....	93
Belief in Hell.....	99
<b>BELIEF IN TIMELESSNESS AND DESTINY ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL.....</b>	<b>102</b>
<b>BELIEF IN ANGELS ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL</b>	<b>110</b>
<b>REQUIREMENTS OF FAITH ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL</b>	<b>118</b>
To Give Thanks to God.....	119
To Submit to God.....	132
To Pray.....	146
To Heed One's Conscience.....	163
To Believe in and Obey God's Messengers.....	169
Belief in and Obedience to God's Commandments in His Holy Books	176
<b>NEARNESS TO GOD AND THE DEPTH OF FAITH ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL .....</b>	<b>180</b>
The Joy and Rapture of Faith in the Gospel. ....	181
Nearness and Devotion to and Genuine Faith in God According to the Gospel .....	185
Soundness and Depth of Faith According to the Gospel	192
Profound Reflection According to the Gospel...	199
Passages Regarding God's Secret Knowledge According to the Gospel .....	202
Passages Regarding the Temporary Nature of the Life of This World According to the Gospel .....	205
<b>COMMANDS AND PROHIBITIONS COMPATIBLE WITH THE QUR'AN IN THE GOSPEL .....</b>	<b>212</b>
Not to Murder.....	213
Not to Steal.....	216

Not to Engage in Prostitution and Adultery.....	217
Homosexuality and Perversion is Forbidden ...	222
Not to Tell Lies.....	224
Not to Cheat.....	227
To Avoid Magic and the Like.....	230
Consumption of Blood is Prohibited .....	230
Meat from Animals That Have Been Killed by Strangulation is Forbidden	231
Not to Eat Meat Slaughtered in the Name of Anything Other Than God	232
Not to Drink Wine.....	233

#### **OTHER PROVISIONS OF THE GOSPEL THAT ARE COMPLIANT WITH THE QUR'AN .....**

Commanding What is Right and Forbidding What is Wrong	237
Not to Cause Dissension .....	238
Repentance.....	239
Not to Profligate.....	243
To Greet First When Entering Houses.....	244
To Use the Phrase: If God Wills .....	244
The Unity of Believers .....	245
Entrusting to Reliable Men.....	247
Ruling Justly.....	248
Abstaining from Evil.....	252
Doing Good Deeds.....	254
Abstaining from Hypocrisy and Showing-off.	261
Cleansing the Lower Self, Abstaining from Self-Centered Passions of the Lower Self.....	263
Doing Good Works and Competing to Do Good	267
Obedying God's Commandments at the Same Time as Advising Others to Heed Them.....	274
Respecting Devout Parents .....	275

#### **EXAMPLES OF THE MORAL VIRTUES ADVISED IN THE GOSPEL 276**

To Be Humble and Avoid Arrogance .....	277
To Be Generous and Avoid Parsimony.....	284
Being Alert and Self-Controlled for God's Sake	289
To Be Righteous and Truthful.....	296

Being Affectionate and Compassionate.....	303
Being Forgiving.....	306
Being Meek and Gentle.....	308
Overcoming Anger.....	311
Being Trustworthy.....	312
Having Fortitude.....	315
Avoiding Envy.....	318
To Be Peace-Loving.....	322
To Be Loyal.....	323
To Help Others .....	325
The Importance of the Good Sense and Wisdom Imparted in the Gospel	327

## **IMPORTANCE OF PRAISING GOD AND SAYING GOOD**

### **WORDS AS MENTIONED IN THE GOSPEL .....332**

Praising God .....	333
Abstaining from Evil Language and Speaking with Good Words	339
Abstaining from Disputative Language .....	343
Avoiding Worthless Words .....	345
Speaking Truthfully .....	347
Preaching the Orders of God and the True Religion	348
Abstaining from Gossip .....	351

### **PRACTICES IN THE GOSPEL COMPATIBLE WITH THE QUR'AN 352**

Fasting.....	353
Giving Alms.....	354
Daily Prayer in the Gospel.....	362
Specified Times of Worship in the Gospel....	364

## **THE PROPHET JESUS' (PBUH) HUMAN CHARACTERISTICS**

### **AND HIS BEING A SERVANT OF GOD .....366**

The Prophet Jesus (pbuh) is a Human Being.	367
The Prophet Jesus' (pbuh) Birth, Lineage and Family	367
The Prophet Jesus' (pbuh) Childhood, Knowledge and Physical Development.....	368
The Prophet Jesus' (pbuh) Eating and Drinking	369

The Prophet Jesus' (pbuh) Becoming Tired and Resting and Sleeping.....	371
Examples of the Prophet Jesus' (pbuh) Other Human Characteristics.....	371
The Prophet Jesus (pbuh) is a Servant of God..	372
The Prophet Jesus (pbuh) is a Prophet Sent by God	372
The Prophet Jesus (pbuh) Fulfills God's Commands	374
It is God Who Makes the Prophet Jesus (pbuh) Speak	375
It is God Who Gives the Prophet Jesus (pbuh) Everything	376
The Prophet Jesus (pbuh) Prays to and Worships God	377
The Prophet Jesus (pbuh) is Tested.....	379

## **THE SECRET OF THE TEST AND THE TESTS FACED**

### **BY BELIEVERS IN THE GOSPEL.....380**

Believers Struggle with Their Lives and Chattels on God's Path	381
Unbelievers Torture and Imprison Believers for No Just Reason	384
Unbelievers Seek to Kill or Exile Believers . .	387
The False Accusations and Oppression Directed against Believers	388
Unbelievers' Mockery of Believers.....	391
How People Shun Believers.....	392
Believers are Tested on God's Path .....	393
Believers' Knowledge of the Secret of the Test and Their Courage on God's Path .....	395

## **THE CHARACTER OF THE HYPOCRITE IN THE GOSPEL 400**

They Only Abide by Religion Superficially and Do Not Truly Believe .....	401
They Try to Portray Religion as Difficult.....	402
They Add Things to Religion and Multiply Lawful and Unlawful Things to Appear Full of Devotion	402
They are Secretly Irreligious.....	404
Although They Possess Knowledge, They Do Not Understand Faith .....	404
They Say What is Not in Their Hearts.....	405
They Worship for Show.....	405



They Worry about Other People's Approval, Instead of God's .....	407
They Do Not Do What They Tell Others to Do ..	407
Their External Appearances are Deceptive ..	407
They Plot against Believers.....	409
They Join Believers to Send Reports to Deniers	409
They Seek to Have Believers Imprisoned with False Evidence.....	410
They Seek to Kill or Exile Believers.....	410
They Collaborate against and Betray Believers	411
They are Full of Hatred toward Believers.....	412
They Deliberately Watch out and Seek Weaknesses among Muslims .....	413
They Invent Excuses to Avoid Striving on God's Path	413
They Do Not Want to Spend in the Way of God	414
They Approach Believers out of Self-Interest...	415
They Abandon Believers When There is Nothing to Gain from Them .....	415
They are Unwise.....	415
They are Arrogant and Unpleasantly Brazen	416
They Seek to Hinder Other People's Faith....	417
They Seek to Divert People Whose Faith is Weak from the True Path	417
They Join Believers in Order to Spread Corruption	419
They Do Not Completely Renounce the Life of the Society of Ignorance	420
They are Punished in this World and the Hereafter	421

## **STATEMENTS REGARDING CREATION IN THE GOSPEL 422**

## **SOME SIMILAR PASSAGES FROM THE GOSPEL AND THE QUR'AN 426**

### **APPENDIX:**

## **THE DECEPTION OF EVOLUTION .....454**

# A STATEMENT REGARDING THE MUSLIM PERSPECTIVE ON THE TORAH AND THE GOSPEL

God reveals in the Qur'an that Muslims must believe in our Prophet Muhammed (may God bless him and grant him peace) and in all the prophets sent before him and in everything sent down to those prophets. In verse 4 of Surat al-Baqara, our Lord says that Muslims are **"those who believe in what has been sent down to you and what was sent down before you..."**

As revealed in the Qur'an, the Gospel, Torah, Psalms and the pages of Abraham are books sent down to prophets who lived in the past. Some of these books have disappeared, while others have been altered or distorted. But they nevertheless contain a great many correct pronouncements belonging to the true faith. Muslims analyze these according to the Qur'an and the Sunna [teachings of the Prophet Muhammad (may God bless him and grant him peace)] and decide that they are correct statements compatible with verses and the hadith. Therefore, statements in the Torah and the Gospel that conform to the Qur'an and the Sunna are statements that Muslims can benefit from. But the essential precondition is for these statements to be in agreement with the verses of the Qur'an and the hadiths.

God revealed that these books were guides to the people living at the time they were sent. Allah tells in the verses:

**He has sent down the Book to you with truth, confirming what was there before it. And He sent down the Torah and the Gospel, previously, as guidance for mankind, and He has sent down the Furqan. (Surah Al 'Imran, 3-4)**

In other verses about the Gospel our Lord reveals:

**And We sent Jesus son of Mary following in their footsteps, confirming the Torah that came before him. We gave him the Gospel containing guidance and light, confirming the Torah that came before it, and as guidance and admonition for those who have taqwa [righteousness]. The people of the Gospel should judge by what Allah sent down in it. Those who do not judge by what Allah has sent down, such people are deviators. (Surat al-Ma'ida, 46-47)**

**Then We sent Our Messengers following in their footsteps and sent Jesus son of Mary after them, giving him the Gospel. We put compassion and**

**mercy in the hearts of those who followed him.They invented monasticism-We did not prescribe it for them-purely out of desire to gain the pleasure of Allah, but even so they did not observe it as it should have been observed. To those of them who had faith We gave their reward but many of them are deviators. (Surat al-Hadid, 27)**

This book you are reading only uses some of the extracts from the Gospel that are compatible with the Qur'an and the Sunna of our Prophet Muhammad (may God bless him and grant him peace).

# Love of God and the Concept of Love Which God Approves According to the Gospel

One of the teachers of the law came and heard them debating. Noticing that Jesus had given them a good answer, he asked him, "Of all the commandments, which is the most important?" "The most important one," answered Jesus, "is this: 'Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God, the Lord is one. **Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind and with all your strength. To love Him with all your heart, with all your understanding and with all your strength, and to love your neighbor as yourself is more important than all burnt offerings and sacrifices.**'" (Mark, 12:28-33)

He answered: "'**Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your strength and with all your mind**'; and, 'Love your neighbor as yourself.'" (Luke, 10:27)

And **this is love: that we walk in obedience to His commands**. As you have heard from the beginning, His command is that you walk in love. (2 John, 1:6)

**'Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.'** This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: **'Love your neighbor as yourself.'** (Matthew, 22:37-39)

**Above all, love each other deeply, because love covers over a multitude of sins.** (1 Peter, 4:8)

**Be devoted to one another in brotherly love.** Honor one another above yourselves. (Romans, 12:10)

**Dear friends, let us love one another, for love comes from God. Everyone who loves... knows God.** Whoever does not love does not know God, because God is love... Dear friends, **since God so loved us, we also ought to love one another.** (1 John, 4:7-11)

And this is my prayer: **that your love may abound more** and more in knowledge and depth of insight. (Philippians, 1:9)

[Jesus:] "A new command I give you: **Love one another. As I have loved you, so you must love one another.** By this all men will know that you are my disciples, if you love one another." (John, 13:34-35)

**Love is patient, love is kind. It does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud. It is not rude, it is not self-seeking, it is not easily angered, it keeps no record of wrongs. Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth. It always protects, always trusts, always hopes, always perseveres. Love never fails.** (1 Corinthians, 13: 4-8)

But **the man who loves God is known by God.** (1 Corinthians, 8:3)

**If you love those who love you, what reward will you get?** Are not even the tax collectors doing that? And if you greet only your brothers, what are you doing more than others?... (Matthew, 5:46-47)

You have heard that it was said, '**Love your neighbor** and hate your enemy. ' But I tell you: **Love your enemies** and pray for those who persecute you. (Matthew, 5: 43-44)

**And live a life of love, just as Christ loved us...** (Ephesians, 5:2)

**"If you love me,** you will obey what I command [for God's sake]. Whoever has my commands [for God's sake] and obeys them, he is the one who loves me. **He who loves me will be loved by God, and I too will love him...**" (John, 14:15, 21)

Jesus replied, **"If anyone loves me, he will obey my teaching. God will love him...** He who does not love me will not obey my teaching. These words you hear are not my own; they belong to God Who sent me." (John, 14:23-24)

This is my command: **Love each other.** (John, 15:17)

However, as it is written: "No eye has seen, no ear has heard, no mind has conceived **what God has prepared [in the life of the hereafter] for those who love Him.**" (1 Corinthians, 2:9)

... **"Love your neighbor as yourself."** (Galatians, 5:14)

[Jesus:] **"As God has loved me, so have I loved you. Now remain in my love.** If you obey my commands [for God's sake], you will remain in my love, just as I have obeyed God's commands and remain in His love. I have told you this so that my joy may be in you and that your joy may be complete. My command is this: **Love each other as I have loved you. Greater love has no one than this, that he lay down his life for his friends.** You are my friends if you do what I command. (John, 15:9-14)

... **If we love one another, [God's] His love is made complete in us.** (1 John, 4:12)

And hope does not disappoint us, because **God has poured out His love into our hearts...** (Romans, 5:5)

And so **we know and rely on the love God has for us. God is love. Whoever lives [for God's sake] in love lives in God...** (1 John, 4:16)

Therefore, as God's chosen people, holy and dearly loved, **clothe yourselves** with compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness and patience. Bear with each other and forgive whatever grievances

you may have against one another. Forgive as the Lord forgave you. And **over all these virtues put on love...** (Colossians, 3:12-14)

**We love because He [God] first loved us.** If anyone says, "I love God," yet hates his brother, he is a liar. For anyone who does not love his brother, whom he has seen, cannot love God, Whom he has not seen. And He has given us this command: **Whoever loves God must also love his brother.** (1 John, 4:19-21)

... Jesus replied... "If you want to enter life, obey the commandments." "Which ones?" the man inquired. Jesus replied, "'Do not murder, do not commit adultery, do not steal, do not give false testimony, honor your father and mother, 'and 'love your neighbor as yourself.' " (Matthew, 19:17-19)

**Let love be without dissimulation..** Hate what is evil; cling to what is good. (Romans, 12:9)

Don't let anyone look down on you because you are young, but **set an example for the believers** in speech, in life, **in love**, in faith and in purity. (1 Timothy, 4:12)

Now we ask you, brothers, to respect those who work hard among you, who are over you in the Lord and who admonish you. **Hold them in the highest regard in love** because of their work. Live in peace with each other. (1 Thessalonians, 5:12-13)

We ought always to thank God for you, brothers, and rightly so, because your faith is growing more and more, and **the love every one of you has for each other is increasing.** Therefore... we boast about your perseverance and faith in all the persecutions and trials you are enduring. (2 Thessalonians, 1:3-4)

For I am convinced that neither death nor life, neither angels nor demons, neither the present nor the future, nor any powers, neither height nor depth, **nor anything else in all creation, will be able to separate us from the love of God...** (Romans, 8:38-39)

... We know that we all possess knowledge. Knowledge puffs up, but **love builds up.** (1 Corinthians, 8:1)

**Let no debt remain outstanding, except the continuing debt to love one another,** for he who loves his fellowman has fulfilled the law [God's commandments]. (Romans, 13:8)

**This is love for God: to obey His commands.** And His commands are not burdensome. (1 John, 5:3)

Now that you have purified yourselves **by obeying the truth so that you have sincere love for your brothers, love one another deeply, from the heart.** (1 Peter, 1:22)

Show proper respect to everyone: **Love the brotherhood of believers,** fear God... (1 Peter, 2:17)

Finally, all of you, live in harmony with one another; having compassion one of another, **love as**

**brothers**, be compassionate and humble. (1 Peter, 3:8)

This is the message you heard from the beginning: **We should love one another.** (1 John, 3:11)

Dear children, **let us not love with words or tongue but with actions and in truth.** (1 John, 3:18)

And this is His [God's] command: ... **to love one another as he [God's messenger] commanded us.** (1 John, 3:23)

**Jesus looked at him and loved him.** "One thing you lack," he said. "Go, sell everything you have and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven. Then come, follow me." (Mark, 10:21)

But **the world must learn that I love God** and that I do exactly what God has commanded me. (John, 14:31)

[Jesus:] **No, God Himself loves you because you have loved me...** (John, 16:27)

The commandments, "Do not commit adultery," "Do not murder," "Do not steal," "Do not covet," and whatever other commandment there may be, are summed up in this one rule: **"Love your neighbor as yourself."** Love does no harm to its neighbor. Therefore love is the fulfillment of the law [God's commandments]. (Romans, 13:9-10)

**Grace to all who love... Jesus Christ with an undying love.** (Ephesians, 6:24)

**For this reason**, ever since I heard about... your love for all the saints [those who dedicate themselves to God], **I have not stopped giving thanks for you, remembering you in my prayers.** (Ephesians, 1:15-16)

We always thank God... when we pray for you, because we have heard of your faith in Christ Jesus and **of the love you have for all the saints** [those who dedicate themselves to God]. (Colossians, 1:3-4)

**Now about brotherly love we do not need to write to you**, for you yourselves have been taught by God to love each other. And in fact, **you do love all the brothers** throughout Macedonia. Yet we urge you, brothers, to do so more and more. (1 Thessalonians , 4:9-10)

If you really keep the royal law found in Scripture, **"Love your neighbor as yourself,"** you are doing right. (James, 2:8)

These have come so that your faith... may be proved genuine and may result in praise, glory and honor when Jesus Christ is revealed. **Though you have not seen him, you love him;** and even though you do not see him now, you believe in him and are filled with an inexpressible and glorious joy. (1 Peter, 1:7-8)

If anyone says, **"I love God,"** yet hates his brother, he is a liar. For anyone who does not love his brother, whom he has seen, cannot love God, whom he has not seen. And he has given us this

command: **Whoever loves God must also love his brother.** (1 John, 4:20-21)

... I am not writing you a new command but one we have had from the beginning. **I ask that we love one another.** (2 John, 1:5)

**Keep on loving each other as brothers.** Do not forget to entertain strangers, for by so doing some people have entertained angels without knowing it. Remember those in prison as if you were their fellow prisoners, and those who are mistreated as if you yourselves were suffering. (Hebrews, 13:1-3)

**May the Lord make your love increase and overflow for each other and for everyone else, just as ours does for you.** (1 Thessalonians, 3:12)

This is how we know who the servants of God... Anyone who does not do what is right is not a child of God [one of the servants with whom God is pleased]; nor is anyone who does not love his brother. (1 John, 3, 10)

**Whoever loves his brother lives in the light [with God's light],** and there is nothing in him to make him stumble. But whoever hates his brother is in the darkness and walks around in the darkness; he does not know where he is going, because the darkness has blinded him. (1 John, 2:10-11)

For God did not give us a spirit of timidity, but a spirit of power, of love... (2 Timothy, 1:7)

... He [Onemius] is very dear to me [Paul] but even dearer to you [Philemon], **both as a man and as a brother in the Lord.** (Philemon, 1:16)

[Jesus:] "But I tell you who hear me: **Love your enemies**, do good to those who hate you, bless those who curse you, pray for those who mistreat you." (Luke, 6:27-28)

If you love those who love you, what credit is that to you? Even 'sinners' love those who love them. (Luke, 6:32)

Woe to you... You give God a tenth of your mint, rue and all other kinds of garden herbs, but you neglect justice and **the love of God.** You should have practiced the latter without leaving the former undone. (Luke, 11:42)

Who shall separate us from the love of Christ [for God's sake]? Shall trouble or hardship or persecution or famine or nakedness or danger or sword? (Romans, 8:35)

And now these three remain: faith, hope and **love**... (1 Corinthians, 13:13)

If I speak in the tongues of men and of angels, but have not love, I am only a resounding gong or a clanging cymbal. If I have... all mysteries and all knowledge... but have not love, I am nothing. If I give all I possess to the poor and surrender my body to the flames, but have not love, I gain nothing. (1 Corinthians, 13:1-3)



# FEAR OF GOD ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL

I tell you, my friends, do not be afraid of those who kill the body and after that can do no more. But **I will show you Whom you should fear: Fear Him Who, after the killing of the body, has power to throw you into hell. Yes, I tell you, fear Him.** (Luke, 12:4-5)

**... So you must live in reverent fear of Him during your time as "foreigners in the land."** (1 Peter, 1:17)

Show proper respect to everyone: Love the brotherhood of believers, **fear God**... (1 Peter, 2:17)

... to every nation, tribe, language and people. He said in a loud voice, "**Fear God** and give Him glory..." (Revelation, 14:6-7)

[Jesus:] "Do not be afraid of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul. Rather, **be afraid of the One** Who can destroy both soul and body in hell." (Matthew, 10:28)

For the Mighty One [God] has done great things for me—holy is His name. **His mercy extends to those who fear Him**, from generation to generation. (Luke, 1:49-50)

He and all his family were devout and **God-fearing**; he gave generously to those in need and prayed to God regularly. (Acts, 10:2)

Therefore, since **we know what it means to fear the Lord**, we try to persuade people. We ourselves are perfectly known to God. I hope we are also really known to your consciences. (2 Corinthians, 5:11)

He said in a loud voice, "**Fear God** and give Him glory, because the hour of His judgment has come. Worship Him Who made the heavens, the earth, the sea and the springs of water." (Revelation, 14:7)

The men replied, "... He is a righteous and **God-fearing man**, who is respected by all the Jewish people..." (Acts, 10:22)

Then Peter began to speak: "I now realize how true it is that God does not show favoritism but accepts men from every nation **who fear Him** and do what is right. (Acts, 10:34-35)

Brothers, children of Abraham, and you **God-fearing Gentiles**, it is to us that this message of salvation has been sent. (Acts, 13:26)

... Your wrath has come. The time has come for judging the dead, and for rewarding your servants

the prophets and your saints and **those who reverence Your name**, both small and great—and for destroying those who destroy the earth. (Revelation, 11:18)

... But the other rebuked him, saying "**Don't you fear God...**" (Luke, 23:40)

... and sang the song of Moses the servant of God and the song of the Lamb [Jesus]: "Great and marvelous are Your deeds, Lord God Almighty. Just and true are Your ways, King of the ages. **Who will not fear You**, O Lord, and bring glory to Your name? For You alone are holy. All nations will come and worship before You, for Your righteous acts have been revealed." (Revelation, 15:3-4)

Then a voice came from the throne, saying: "**Praise our God**, all you His servants, **you who fear Him, both small and great!**" (Revelation, 19:5)

Therefore... **let us... worship God** acceptably **with reverence and awe**. (Hebrews, 12:28)

# PURE FAITH IN GOD ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL

## To Serve God Alone without Ascribing Equals to Him

Jesus answered, "It is written: '**Worship the Lord your God and serve Him only.**' (Luke, 4:8)

Jesus said to him, "... **Worship the Lord your God, and serve Him only.**" (Matthew, 4:10)

... My dear friends, **flee from idolatry.** (1 Corinthians, 10:14)

For they themselves report what kind of reception you gave us. **They tell how you turned to God** from idols to serve the living and true God... (1 Thessalonians, 1:9-10)

And instead of worshiping the glorious, ever-living God, they worshiped idols made to look like mere people and birds and animals and reptiles [surely God is beyond that]... They exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served created things rather than the Creator [surely God is beyond that]—Who is forever praised... (Romans, 1:23-25)

... If then the light within you is darkness, how great is that darkness! **No one can serve two masters.** Either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to the one and despise the other. **You cannot serve both God and money.** (Matthew, 6:23-24)

[Jesus:] "**No servant can serve two masters... You cannot serve both God and money.**" (Luke, 16:13)

... **Some people are still so accustomed to idols that when they eat such food they think of it as having been sacrificed to an idol**, and since their conscience is weak, it is defiled. But food does not bring us near to God; we are no worse if we do not eat, and no better if we do. (1 Corinthians, 8:7-8)

No, but **the sacrifices of pagans are offered to demons, not to God**, and I do not want you to be participants with demons. You cannot drink the cup of the Lord and the cup of demons too; you cannot have a part in both the Lord's table and the table of demons. (1 Corinthians, 10:20-21)

So then, about eating food sacrificed to idols: We know that an idol is nothing at all in the world and that **there is no God but one.** (1 Corinthians, 8:4)

Dear children, **keep yourselves from idols.** (1 John, 5:21)

The rest of mankind that were not killed by these plagues still **did not repent of the work of their hands**; they did not stop worshiping demons, and idols of gold, silver, bronze, stone and wood—idols that cannot see or hear or walk. (Revelation, 9:20)

## To Live for God's Approval Alone

So whether you eat or drink or whatever you do, **do it all for the glory of God.** (1 Corinthians, 10:31)

**Whatever you do, work at it with all your heart, as working for the Lord, not for men,** since you know that you will receive an inheritance from the Lord as a reward... (Colossians, 3:23-24)

**He who regards one day as special, does so to the Lord. He who eats meat, eats to the Lord, for he gives thanks to God; and he who abstains, does so to the Lord** and gives thanks to God. For none of us lives to himself alone and none of us dies to himself alone. So, whether we live or die, we belong to the Lord. (Romans, 14:6-8)

**... This is love for God: to obey His commands.** And His commands are not burdensome... This is the victory that has overcome the world—our faith. (1 John, 5:2-4)

... This calls for patient endurance on the part of the saints who **obey God's commandments** and remain faithful to Jesus. (Revelation, 14:12)

And we pray this in order that you may live a life worthy of the Lord and **may please Him in every way:** bearing fruit in every good work, growing in the knowledge of God. (Colossians, 1:10)

**And without faith it is impossible to please God,** because anyone who comes to Him must believe that He exists and that He rewards those who earnestly seek Him. (Hebrews, 11:6)

Therefore, since we are receiving a kingdom that cannot be shaken, let us be thankful, **and so worship God acceptably with reverence and awe...** (Hebrews, 12:28)

For **it is commendable if a man bears up under the pain of unjust suffering because he is conscious of God.** But how is it to your credit if you receive a beating for doing wrong and endure it? **But if you suffer for doing good and you endure it, this is commendable before God.** (1 Peter, 2:19-20)

**... Each one should retain the place in life that the Lord assigned to him and to which God has called him.** This is the rule I lay down in all the churches. (1 Corinthians, 7:17)

... but only **he who does the will of God [will enter the kingdom of paradise].** (Matthew, 7:21)

... From Whom all things came and **for Whom we live;** and **there is but one Lord...** through Whom all things came and through Whom we live. (1 Corinthians, 8:5-6)

Indeed, **those who are under the control of human nature [lower-self] cannot please God.** You, however, are controlled not by the human nature but by the Spirit of God... (Romans, 8:8-9)

Live as free men, but do not use your freedom as a cover-up for evil; **live as servants of God.** (1 Peter, 2:16)

... He who has suffered in his body is done with sin. As a result, he does not live the rest of his earthly life **for evil human desires, but rather for the will of God**. (1 Peter, 4:1-2)

... **Those who suffer according to God's will** should commit themselves to their faithful Creator and continue to do good. (1 Peter, 4:19)

[Jesus:] "The One [God] Who sent me is with me; He has not left me alone, for **I always do what pleases Him [God]**." (John, 8:29)

**Obey them not only to win their favor when their eye is on you... doing the will of God from your heart**. (Ephesians, 6:6)

The world and its desires pass away, **but the man who does the will of God** lives forever. (1 John, 2:17)

... We speak as men approved by God to be entrusted with the Gospel. **We are not trying to please men but God**, Who tests our hearts. (1 Thessalonians, 2:4)

Finally, brothers, **we instructed you how to live in order to please God**, as in fact you are living. Now we ask you and urge you... to do this more and more. (1 Thessalonians, 4:1)

Because anyone who serves Christ in this way [the one who aids Jesus in the path of God] is **pleasing to God** and approved by men. Let us therefore make every effort to do what leads to peace and to mutual edification. (Romans, 14:18-19)

I am saying this for your own good, not to restrict you, but **that you may live in a right way in undivided devotion to the Lord**. (1 Corinthians, 7:35)

"Why do you ask me about what is good?" Jesus replied. "There is only One [God] Who is good. **If you want to enter life, obey the commandments [of God]**." (Matthew, 19:17)

We know that God does not listen to sinners. He listens to the **godly man who does His will**. (John, 9:31)

For **it is not those who hear the law who are righteous in God's Sight, but it is those who obey the law [God's commandments] who will be declared righteous**. (Romans, 2:13)

... **Keeping God's commands is what counts**. (1 Corinthians, 7:19)

So **we make it our goal to please Him [God]**, whether we are at home in the body or away from it. (2 Corinthians, 5:9)

**Am I now trying to win the approval** of men, or **of God**? Or am I trying to please men? (Galatians, 1:10)

So you also, **when you have done everything you were told to do**, should say, 'We are unworthy servants; we have only done our duty.'" (Luke, 17:10)

Children, obey your parents [who have faith] in everything, **for this pleases the Lord.** (Colossians, 3:20)

**Whoever does God's will** is my brother and sister and mother. (Mark, 3:35)

I urge, then, first of all, that requests, prayers, intercession and thanksgiving be made [to God] for everyone—for kings and all those in authority, that we may live peaceful and quiet lives in all godliness and holiness. **This is good, and pleases God...** (1 Timothy, 2:1-3)

But if a widow has children or grandchildren, these should learn first of all to put their religion into practice by caring for their own family and so repaying their parents and grandparents, for **this is pleasing to God.** (1 Timothy, 5:4)

Jesus answered, "My teaching is not my own. It comes from Him [God] Who sent me. **If anyone chooses to do God's will,** he will find out whether my teaching comes from God or whether I speak on my own. He who speaks on his own does so to gain honor for himself, but he who works for the honor of the One [God] Who sent him is a man of truth... (John, 7:16-18)

Dear friends, if our hearts do not condemn us, we have confidence before God and receive from Him [God] anything we ask, because **we obey His commands and do what pleases Him.** (1 John, 3:21-22)

**For God is working in you, giving you the desire and the power to do what pleases Him.** (Philippians, 2:13)

**Those who obey His [God's] commands live in Him [he lives close to God],** and He in them [he lives feeling God's mercy upon himself]... (1 John, 3:24)

"My food," said Jesus, "**is to do the will of Him [God's] Who sent me and to finish His work [to ensure that God's commandments are fulfilled].**" (John, 4:34)

For I [Jesus] have come... not to do my will **but to do the will of Him [God's] Who sent me.** (John, 6:38)

## **To Shun the Superstitious Rites and Religion of the Ancestors**

Then... came to Jesus... and asked, "Why do your disciples break the tradition of the elders?... Jesus replied, **"And why do you break the command of God for the sake of your tradition?"** (Matthew, 15:1-3)

... [They] asked Jesus, "Why don't your disciples live according to the tradition of the elders...?" He [Jesus] replied, **"... You have let go of the commands of God and are holding on to the traditions of men."** And he [Jesus] said to them: **"You have no**

**trouble rejecting the commands of God in order to observe your own traditions!" (Mark, 7:5-9)**

## THE ONENESS OF GOD ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL

One of the teachers of the law came and heard them debating. Noticing that Jesus had given them a good answer, he asked him, "Of all the commandments, which is the most important?" **"The most important one,"** answered Jesus, "is this: 'Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God, **the Lord is One.**' "Well said, teacher," the man replied. "You are right in saying that **God is One and there is no other but Him.**" (Mark, 12:28-32)

... But **God is One.** (Galatians, 3:20)

There are different kinds of working, **but the same God works all of them in all men.** (1 Corinthians, 12:6)

**For there is one God...** (1 Timothy, 2:5)

Jesus said to him, "... **Worship the Lord your God, and serve Him only.**" (Matthew, 4:10)

**You believe that there is one God. Good!** Even the demons believe that—and shudder. (James, 2:19)

Now to the King eternal, immortal, invisible, **the only God, be honor and glory for ever and ever.** (1 Timothy, 1:17)

How can you believe if you accept praise from one another, yet make no effort to obtain the praise that comes from **the only God?** (John, 5:44)

... **You have one Lord...** (Matthew, 23:9)

As Jesus started on his way, a man ran up to him and fell on his knees before him. "Good teacher," he asked, "What must I do to inherit eternal life?" Jesus answered, "**No one is good—except God alone.**" (Mark 10:17-18)

... We know that an idol is nothing at all in the world and that **there is no god but One... for us there is but one God, the God, from Whom all things came** and for Whom we live... (1 Corinthians, 8:4-6)

"Why do you ask me about what is good?" Jesus replied. "**There is only One Who is good.** If you want to enter life [paradise], **obey the commandments of [God].**" (Matthew, 19:17)

For even if there are so-called gods [surely God is beyond that], whether in heaven or on earth yet for us **there is one God**, the God, for Whom all things came and for whom we live. (1 Corinthians 8:5-6)

... **One Lord**, one faith... **one God of all**, Who is over all and through all and in all. (Ephesians, 4:5-6)

For every house is built by someone, but **God is the builder of everything.** (Hebrews, 3:4)



Now **all glory to God**... (Jude, 1:24)

# THE TITLES OF GOD ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL

## That God is the Creator of All Things

When they heard this, they raised their voices together in prayer to God. "**Sovereign Lord**," they said, "**You made the heaven and the earth and the sea, and everything in them.**" (Acts, 4:24)

**The God Who made the world and everything in it is the Lord of heaven and earth...** (Acts, 17:24)

**The God Who made the world and everything in it is the Lord of heaven and earth... He Himself gives all men life and breath and everything else... He made every nation of men, that they should inhabit the whole earth.** (Acts, 17:24-26)

... We are bringing you good news, telling you to turn from these worthless things to the living **God, Who made heaven and earth and sea and everything in them.** He [God] has shown kindness by giving you rain from heaven and crops in their seasons; He provides you with plenty of food and fills your hearts with joy. (Acts, 14:15-17)

Fear God and give Him glory, because the hour of His judgment has come. **Worship Him Who made the heavens, the earth, the sea and the springs of water.** (Revelation, 14:7)

He also says, "In the beginning, **O Lord, You laid the foundations of the earth, and the heavens are the work of Your hands.** [That God created everything from nothing, that He is the Creator of everything is depicted by means of a comparison.] (Hebrews, 1:10)

**For from Him and through Him and to Him are all things.** To Him be the glory forever! Amen. (Romans, 11:36)

... **For we are God's masterpiece,** created... to do good works, which God prepared in advance for us to do. (Ephesians, 2:10)

**He [God] chose to give birth to us by giving us his true word.** And we, out of all creation, became His prized possession. (James, 1:18)

... You are worthy, our Lord and God, to receive glory and honor and power, for **You created all things, and by Your will they were created and have their being.** (Revelation, 4:11)

For by Him all things were created: **things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or powers or rulers or authorities; all things were created by Him and for Him.** He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together. (Colossians, 1:16-17)

**Yet for us there is but one God, from Whom all things came and for Whom we live; and**

**there is but one Lord... through Whom all things came and through Whom we live.** (1 Corinthians, 8:6)

## **That God is Eternal and Timeless**

**He is before all things**, and in Him all things hold together. (Colossians, 1:17)

God, the blessed and only Ruler, the King of kings and Lord of lords, **Who alone is immortal...** Whom no one has seen or can see. To him be honor and might forever. Amen. (1 Timothy, 6:15-16)

Now... **eternal, immortal**, invisible, **the only God**, be honor and glory for ever and ever. (1 Timothy, 1:17)

... You have known **Him [God] Who is from the beginning.** (1 John, 2:14)

... And the twenty-four elders... fell on their faces and worshiped God, saying: "We give thanks to You, Lord God Almighty, **the One Who is and Who was...**" (Revelation, 11:16-17)

... Day and night they never stop saying: "Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God Almighty, **Who was, and is, and is to come.**" (Revelation, 4:8)

**Because of the truth [God, the Riteous]** which lives in us and **will be with us forever.** (2 John, 1:2)

For from Him and through Him and to Him are all things. **To Him be the glory forever!** Amen. (Romans, 11:36)

... **The glory of the immortal God...** (Romans, 1:23)

## **That God Sees, Hears and Knows All**

Do not be like them, for **God knows what you need before you ask Him.** (Matthew, 6:8)

**Nothing in all creation is hidden from God's Sight. Everything is uncovered and laid bare before the eyes of Him to Whom we must give account.** (Hebrews, 4:13)

**For where two or three come together in My name, there am I with them.** (Matthew, 18:20)

Are not five sparrows sold for two pennies? Yet **not one of them is forgotten by God. Indeed, the very hairs of your head are all numbered.** (Luke, 12:6-7)

We accept man's testimony, but **God's testimony is greater...** (1 John, 5:9)

**No one knows about that day or hour**, not even the angels in heaven, **but only the Lord.** (Matthew, 24:36)

... the **depth of the riches** of the wisdom and **knowledge of God!** (Romans, 11:33)

## **That God Knows the Secret Aspects of All Things**

... **He will bring to light what is hidden in darkness and will expose the motives of men's hearts.** At that time each will receive his praise from God. (1 Corinthians, 4:5)

**For there is nothing hidden that will not be disclosed, and nothing concealed that will not be known or brought out into the open.** (Luke, 8:17)

For the word of God is living and active... it penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow; **it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart.** (Hebrews, 4:12)

He said to them, "You are the ones who justify yourselves in the eyes of men, but **God knows your hearts.** What is highly valued among men is detestable in God's Sight." (Luke, 16:15)

But when you pray, go into your room, close the door and pray to your Lord, Who is unseen. **Then your God, Who sees what is done in secret, will reward you.** (Matthew, 6:6)

## **That God is Almighty**

Jesus looked at them and said, "With man this is impossible, but **with God all things are possible.**" (Matthew, 19:26)

... **Who is God over all,** forever praised! (Romans, 9:5)

Are not two sparrows sold for a penny? Yet **not one of them will fall to the ground apart from the will of God.** (Matthew, 10:29)

**For Yours** is the kingdom and **the power and the glory forever.** Amen. (Matthew, 6:13)

... **Great and marvelous are Your deeds, Lord God Almighty.** Just and true are Your ways. (Revelation, 15:3)

... Salvation and **glory and power belong to our God,** for true and just are His judgments... For **our Lord God Almighty reigns.** (Revelation, 19:1-6)

In Him we were also chosen, having been predestined according to the plan of Him [God's] **Who works out everything in conformity** with the purpose of His will. (Ephesians, 1:11)

... **For there is no authority except that which God has established. The authorities that exist have been established by God.** (Romans, 13:1)

... It is written: "'As surely as I live,' says the Lord, '**every knee will bow before Me; every tongue will praise God.**'" (Romans, 14: 11)

**God, the blessed and only Ruler...** Who alone is immortal and Who lives in unapproachable light, Whom no one has seen or can see. **To Him be honor and might forever.** (1 Timothy, 6:15-16)

For **nothing is impossible with God.** (Luke, 1:37)

And sang the song of Moses the servant of God and the song of the Lamb: "**Great and marvelous are your deeds, Lord God Almighty.** Just and true are Your ways, Lord of the ages. Who will not fear You, O Lord, and bring glory to Your name? For you alone are holy. All nations will come and worship before You, for Your righteous acts have been revealed." (Revelation, 15: 3-4)

**For from Him and through Him and to Him are all things. To Him be the glory forever!** (Romans, 11:36)

Now to Him **Who is able to do immeasurably more than all we ask or imagine,** according to His power that is at work within us. (Ephesians, 3:20)

... **Everything comes from God.** (1 Corinthians, 11:12)

## **That God is the Only Lord of Power and Will**

"No one can receive anything unless God gives it..." (John, 3: 27)

... **The power of the Lord was present** for him [Jesus] to heal the sick. (Luke, 5:17)

Jesus replied, "Not everyone can accept this word, **but only those to whom it has been given.**" (Matthew, 19:11)

Are not two sparrows sold for a penny? Yet **not one of them will fall to the ground apart from the will of your Lord.** (Matthew, 10:29)

For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith—and **this not from yourselves, it is the gift of God**—not by works, so that no one can boast. For we are God's masterpiece, created... to do good works, which God prepared in advance for us to do. (Ephesians, 2:8-10)

Now listen, you who say, "Today or tomorrow we will go to this or that city, spend a year there, carry on business and make money." Why, you do not even know what will happen tomorrow. What is your life? You are a mist that appears for a little while and then vanishes. Instead, you ought to say, "**If it is the Lord's will, we will live and do this or that.**" (James, 4:13-15)

**For the Mighty One has done great things for me**—holy is His name. (Luke, 1:49)

... It is not Moses who has given you the bread from heaven, but **it is my Lord Who gives you the true bread from heaven.** (John, 6:32)

**The earth is the Lord's, and everything in it.** (1 Corinthians, 10:26)

**Ask the Lord of the harvest**, therefore, to send out workers into his harvest field. (Matthew, 9:38)

But when they arrest you, do not worry about what to say or how to say it. At that time you will be given what to say, **for it will not be you speaking, but the Lord speaking through you.** (Matthew, 10:19-20)

**To Him Who is able to keep you from falling and to present you before His glorious Presence without fault...** (Jude, 1:24-25)

There is only one Lawgiver and Judge, **the One Who is able to save and destroy.** (James, 4:12)

So neither he who plants nor he who waters is anything, but only God, **Who makes things grow.** (1 Corinthians, 3:7)

Not that we are competent in ourselves to claim anything for ourselves, **but our competence comes from God.** (2 Corinthians, 3:5-6)

## **That God is the Only One Worthy of Praise**

**Glory to God in the highest**, and on earth peace to men on whom His favor rests. (Luke, 2:14)

... Who is God over all, **forever praised!** (Romans, 9:5)

**The Creator—Who is forever praised. Amen.** (Romans, 1:25)

The shepherds returned, **glorifying and praising God** for all the things they had heard and seen, which were just as they had been told. (Luke, 2:20)

"Amen! **Praise and glory** and wisdom and thanks and honor and power and strength **be to our God for ever and ever.**" (Revelation, 7:12)

**With the tongue we praise our Lord...** (James, 3:9)

So that the Gentiles may **glorify God** for His mercy, as it is written: "Therefore **I will praise you among the Gentiles**; I will sing hymns to Your name." Again, it says, "Rejoice, O Gentiles, with his people." And again, "**Praise the Lord, all you Gentiles, and sing praises to Him, all you peoples.**" (Romans, 15: 9-11)

... **Praise be to the God...** (2 Corinthians, 1:3; Ephesians, 1:3)

## **That God Kills and Resurrects**

... This happened that **we might not rely on ourselves but on God...** (2 Corinthians, 1:9)

Why should any of you consider it incredible that **God raises the dead?** (Acts, 26:8)

**In the Sight of God, Who gives life to everything...** (1 Timothy, 6:13)

He Who... **will also give life to your mortal bodies** through His Spirit, Who lives in you... (Romans, 8:11)

As it is written: "I have made you [Abraham] a father of many nations." He is our father in the Sight of God, in Whom he [Abraham] believed—the God **Who gives life to the dead and calls things that are not as though they were.** (Romans, 4:17)

The God Who made the world and everything in it is the Lord of heaven and earth... **He himself gives all men life** and breath and everything else. (Acts, 17:24-25)

**For just as the Lord raises the dead...** (John, 5:21)

## **That God is the Provider**

... It is not Moses who has given you the bread from heaven, but **it is my Lord Who gives you the true bread from heaven.** (John, 6:32)

Therefore I tell you, **do not worry about your life, what you will eat or drink; or about your body, what you will wear.** Is not life more important than food, and the body more important than clothes? Look at the birds of the air; they do not sow or reap or store away in barns, and yet God feeds them. Are you not much more valuable than they? (Matthew, 6:25-26)

... He has shown kindness by giving you rain from heaven and crops in their seasons; **He provides you with plenty of food and fills your hearts with joy.** (Acts, 14:17)

His mercy extends to those who fear Him, from generation to generation... **He has filled the hungry with good things** but has sent the rich away empty. (Luke, 1:50-53)

Then Jesus said to his disciples: "Therefore I tell you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat; or about your body, what you will wear... **Consider the ravens: They do not sow or reap, they have no storeroom or barn; yet God feeds them. And how much more valuable you are than birds!** (Luke, 12:22-24)

## **That God is All-Loving, Endower and Compassionate**

**His mercy extends to those who fear Him, from generation to generation.** (Luke, 1:50)

**... The Lord is full of compassion and mercy.** (James, 5:11)

Because of the **tender mercy of our God**, by which the rising sun will come to us from heaven to

shine on those living in darkness and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the path of peace. (Luke, 1:78-79)

But **because of His great love for us**, God, Who is rich in mercy, made us alive—it is **by grace you have been saved**. (Ephesians, 2:4-5)

As you know, we consider blessed those who have persevered. **You have heard of Job's perseverance and have seen what the Lord finally brought about. The Lord is full of compassion and mercy**. (James, 5:11)

... With **the riches of God's grace that He lavished on us with all wisdom and understanding**. (Ephesians, 1:7-8)

And we know that in all things God works **for the good of those who love Him**, who have been called according to His purpose. (Romans, 8:28)

But **when the kindness and love of God our Savior appeared, He saved us**, not because of righteous things we had done, but **because of His mercy**... (Titus, 3: 4-6)

And in their prayers for you their hearts will go out to you, **because of the surpassing grace God has given you. Thanks be to God for His indescribable gift!** (2 Corinthians, 9:14-15)

For it is by grace **you have been saved, through faith—and this not from yourselves, it is the gift of God**—not by works, so that no one can boast. For we are God's masterpiece, created... to do good works, which God prepared in advance for us to do. (Ephesians, 2:8-10)

Or do you show contempt for the **riches of His [God's] kindness, understanding and patience**, [surely God is beyond that] not realizing that **God's kindness** leads you toward repentance? (Romans, 2:4)

No temptation has seized you except what is common to man. And **God is faithful; He will not let you be tempted beyond what you can bear. But when you are tempted, He will also provide a way out so that you can stand up under it**. (1 Corinthians, 10:13)

Dear friends, **since God so loved us**, we also ought to love one another. (1 John, 4:11)

Don't be deceived, my dear brothers... **Every good and perfect gift comes from God**. (James, 1:16-17)

Young men, in the same way be submissive to those who are older. All of you, clothe yourselves with humility toward one another, because, "**God opposes the proud but gives grace to the humble**." (1 Peter, 5:5)

... **God of all grace, Who called you to His eternal glory** after you have suffered a little while, will himself restore you and make you strong, firm and steadfast. To Him be the power for ever and ever. (1 Peter, 5:10-11)



**May God Himself, the God of peace, sanctify you through and through.** May your whole spirit, soul and body be kept blameless at the coming of... Jesus Christ. (1 Thessalonians, 5:23)

**Now may the Lord of peace Himself give you peace at all times and in every way.** The Lord be with all of you. (2 Thessalonians, 3:16)

## **That God Watches Over and Protects His Servants**

But the Lord is faithful, and **He will strengthen and protect you from the evil one.** (2 Thessalonians, 3: 3)

Do not be like them, for **God knows what you need before you ask Him.** (Matthew, 6:8)

So then, those who suffer according to God's will should **commit themselves to their faithful Creator** and continue to do good. (1 Peter, 4:19)

... Who through faith are **shielded by God's power** until the coming of the salvation that is ready to be revealed in the last time. (1 Peter, 1:5)

If that is how God clothes the grass of the field, which is here today and tomorrow is thrown into the fire, **will He not much more clothe you**, o you of little faith? (Matthew, 6:30)

Look at the birds of the air; they do not sow or reap or store away in barns, and yet God **feeds them.** Are you not much more valuable than they? (Matthew, 6:26)

So do not worry, saying, 'What shall we eat?' or 'What shall we drink?' or 'What shall we wear?' For the pagans run after all these things, and **God knows that you need them.** (Matthew, 6:31-32)

He committed no sin, and no deceit was found in his mouth. "When they hurled their insults at him, he did not retaliate; when he suffered, he made no threats. Instead, **he entrusted himself to Him [God] Who judges justly.** (1 Peter, 2:22-23)

## **That God Leads to the True Path and Cleanses Spiritual Pollution**

... And are **justified freely by His grace through the redemption that came by God.** (Romans, 3:24)

... **For He purified their hearts by faith.** (Acts, 15:9)

For in the Gospel **a righteousness from God is revealed**, a righteousness that is by faith from first to last, just as it is written: "The righteous will live by faith." (Romans, 1:17)

Who will bring any charge against those whom God has chosen? **It is God Who justifies.** (Romans, 8:33)

So that, **having been justified by His grace,** we might become heirs having the hope of eternal life. (Titus, 3:7)

To **Him Who is able to keep you from falling** and to present you before His glorious Presence **without fault and with great joy...** (Jude, 1:24)

... **Salvation** and glory and power **belong to our God,** for true and just are His judgments... For our Lord God Almighty reigns. (Revelation, 19:1-6)

He chose to **give us birth** through the word of truth... (James, 1:18)

... But you are a chosen people... that you may declare the praises of **Him Who called you out of darkness into His wonderful light...** Once you received no mercy; now you have received **God's mercy.** (1 Peter, 2:9)

It does not, therefore, depend on man's desire or effort, but on God's mercy... Therefore **God has mercy on whom He wants to have mercy, and He hardens whom He wants to harden.** (Romans, 9:16-18)

## **That God Accepts Repentance and Forgives Sins**

... In accordance **with the riches of God's grace that He lavished on us with all wisdom and understanding.** (Ephesians, 1:7-8)

When they heard this, they had no further objections and praised God, saying, "So then, **God has granted even the Gentiles repentance unto life.**" (Acts, 11:18)

For He has rescued us from the dominion of darkness... **we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins.** (Colossians, 1:13-14)

If we confess our sins, **He is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness.** (1 John, 1:9)

And the prayer offered in faith will make the sick person well; the Lord will raise him up. If he has sinned, **he will be forgiven.** (James, 5:15)

**Forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors.** And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one. **For if You forgive men when they sin against You,** God will also forgive you. But if you do not forgive men their sins, your Lord will not forgive your sins. (Matthew, 6:12-15)

He [Jesus] said to them, "When you pray, say: "God, hallowed be Your name... **Forgive us our sins,**

for we also forgive everyone who sins against us. And lead us not into temptation." (Luke, 11:2-4)

"Do not judge, and you will not be judged. Do not condemn, and you will not be condemned. **Forgive, and you will be forgiven.** Give, and it will be given to you. A good measure, pressed down, shaken together and running over, will be poured into your lap. For with the measure you use, it will be measured to you." (Luke, 6:37-38)

**Repent**, then, and turn to God, **so that your sins may be wiped out, that times of refreshing may come from the Lord...** (Acts, 3:19-20)

**Repent of this wickedness and pray to the Lord. Perhaps He will forgive you for having such a thought in your heart.** (Acts, 8:22)

## **That God is the Best of Judges and the Infinitely Just**

**Anyone who does wrong will be repaid for his wrong, and there is no favoritism.** (Colossians, 3:25)

Because you know that **the Lord will reward everyone for whatever good he does, whether he is slave or free.** And masters, treat your slaves in the same way. Do not threaten them, since you know that He... is both their Master and yours... and there is no favoritism with Him. (Ephesians, 6:8-9)

**There will be trouble and distress for every human being who does evil... but glory, honor and peace for everyone who does good... For God does not show favoritism.** (Romans, 2: 9-11)

**Anyone who does wrong will be repaid for his wrong, and there is no favoritism.** (Colossians, 3:25)

**God "will give to each person according to what he has done."** To those who by persistence in doing good seek glory, honor and immortality, He will give eternal life. But for those who are self-seeking and who reject the truth and follow evil, there will be wrath and anger. (Romans, 2:6-8)

**His work will be shown for what it is, because the Day will bring it to light.** (1 Corinthians, 3 : 13)

**They will have to give account to Him Who is ready to judge the living and the dead.** (1 Peter, 4:5)

Since you call on **God Who judges each man's work impartially**, live your lives as strangers here in reverent fear. (1 Peter, 1:17)

God is not unjust [God is surely beyond that]; He will not forget your work and the love you have shown Him as you have helped His people and continue to help them. (Hebrews, 6:10)

The Lord knows how to rescue godly men from trials and to hold the unrighteous for the day of judgment, while continuing their punishment. This is especially true of those who follow the corrupt desire of the sinful nature and despise authority [surely God is beyond that]. (2 Peter, 2:9-10)

The depth of the riches of the wisdom and knowledge of God! **How unsearchable His judgments, and His paths beyond tracing out!** (Romans, 11: 33)

# BELIEF IN THE HEREAFTER ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL

## Belief in Resurrection

... The hour is coming when all who are in their graves will hear His voice and come out—**those who have done good will rise to live, and those who have done evil will rise to be condemned.** (John, 5:28-29)

Then Jesus said to his host, "... when you give a banquet, invite the poor, the crippled, the lame, the blind, and you will be blessed. Although they cannot repay you, **you will be repaid at the resurrection of the righteous [paradise].**" (Luke, 14:12-14)

Come back to your senses as you ought, and stop sinning; for there are some who are ignorant of God—I say this to your shame. But someone may ask, "**How are the dead raised?** With what kind of body will they come?" How foolish! What you sow does not come to life unless it dies. So will it be with the resurrection of the dead. The body that is sown is perishable, **it is raised imperishable**; it is sown in dishonor, **it is raised in glory**; it is sown in weakness, **it is raised in power.** (1 Corinthians, 15:34-36, 42-44)

But **about the resurrection of the dead**—have you not read what God said to you. (Matthew, 22:31)

I declare to you, brothers... nor does the perishable inherit the imperishable. Listen, I tell you a mystery: ... We will all be changed in a flash, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, **the dead will be raised imperishable, and we will be changed [created with a new creation].** (1 Corinthians, 15:50-52)

And **I have the same hope in God** as these men, **that there will be a resurrection of both the righteous and the wicked. So I strive always to keep my conscience clear before God...** (Acts, 24 :15-16)

## Belief in the Day of Judgment

Everything is uncovered and laid bare before the eyes of **Him to Whom we must give account.** (Hebrews, 4:13)

**God "will give to each person according to what he has done."** To those who by persistence in doing good seek glory, honor and immortality, He will give eternal life [paradise]. But for those who are self-seeking and who reject the truth and follow evil, there will be wrath and anger. (Romans, 2:6-8)

But I tell you that men will have **to give account on the day of judgment** for every careless word they have spoken. For by your words you will be acquitted, and by your words you will be condemned. (Matthew, 12:36-37)

He said in a loud voice, "Fear God and give Him glory, because **the hour of His judgment has come**. Worship Him Who made the heavens, the earth, the sea and the springs of water." (Revelation, 14:7)

**His work will be shown for what it is, because the Day will bring it to light.** It will be revealed with fire, and the fire will test the quality of each man's work. (1 Corinthians, 3:13)

**We will all stand before God's judgment seat.** It is written: "'As surely as I live,' says the Lord, 'every knee will bow before Me; every tongue will confess to God.'" So then, each of us will give an account of himself to God. (Romans, 14:10-12)

If this is so, then the Lord knows how to rescue godly men from trials and to hold the unrighteous for the day of judgment, while **continuing their punishment**. This is especially true of those who follow the corrupt desire of the sinful nature and despise authority [Surely God is beyond that]. (2 Peter, 2:9-10)

Do not be deceived: ... **A man reaps what he sows. The one who sows to please his sinful nature [who abides by his lower self], from that nature will reap destruction; the one who sows to please... [God]... will reap eternal life.** (Galatians, 6:7-8)

Now we know that whatever the law says [God's commandments], it says to those who are under the law [to those who are held responsible to abide by God's commandments], so that **every mouth may be silenced and the whole world held accountable to God**. (Romans, 3:19)

**Each one should test his own actions.** Then he can take pride in himself, without comparing himself to somebody else, for **each one should carry his own load**. (Galatians, 6:4-5)

Anyone who breaks one of the least of these commandments and teaches others to do the same will be called least in the kingdom of God [in the hereafter], but whoever practices and teaches these commands will be called great in the kingdom of God [in the hereafter]. (Matthew, 5:19)

You have heard that it was said to the people long ago, 'Do not murder, **anyone who murders will be subject to judgment**.' **But I tell you that anyone who is angry with his brother will be subject to judgment.** Again, anyone who says to his brother, '**You fool!**' **will be in danger of the fire of hell.** (Matthew, 5:21-22)

I tell you the truth, it will be more bearable for Sodom and Gomorrah on the **day of judgment** than for that town. (Matthew, 10:15)

And you, Capernaum, will you be lifted up to the skies? No, you will go down to the place of dead [hell]... But I tell you, even Sodom will be better off on **judgment day** than you." (Matthew, 11:23-24)

I tell you, it will be more bearable on **that day [judgment day]** for Sodom than for that town. "Woe to you, Korazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the miracles that were performed in you had been performed in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. But it will be more bearable for Tyre and Sidon at **the judgment** than for you." (Luke, 10:12-14)

There is a Judge [God] for the one who rejects me and does not accept my words; that very word which I spoke will **condemn him at the last day**. (John, 12:48)

You, therefore, have no excuse, you who pass judgment on someone else, for at whatever point you judge the other, you are condemning yourself, because you who pass judgment do the same things. Now **we know that God's judgment against those who do such things** is based on truth. So when you, a mere man, pass judgment on them and yet do the same things, **do you think you will escape God's judgment?** (Romans, 2: 1-3)

But because of your stubbornness and your unrepentant heart, you are storing up wrath against yourself for **the day of God's wrath**, when His righteous judgment will be revealed. **God will give to each person according to what he has done.** (Romans, 2:5-6)

Isaiah cries out concerning Israel: "Though the number of the Israelites be like the sand by the sea, only the remnant will be saved. **For the Lord will carry out his sentence on earth with speed and finality.**" (Romans, 9:27-28)

I care very little if I am judged by you or by any human court; indeed, I do not even judge myself. My conscience is clear, but that does not make me innocent. **It is the Lord Who judges me.** (1 Corinthians, 4:3-4)

But they will have to **give account to God Who** is ready to judge the living and the dead. (1 Peter, 4:5)

For it is time for **judgment to begin...** (1 Peter, 4:17)

In this way, love is made complete among us [believers] so that we will have confidence on **the day of judgment...** (Jude, 4:17)

To Him [God] Who is able to keep you from falling and to **present you before His glorious Presence** without fault and with great joy—to the only God our Savior be glory, majesty, power and authority... before all ages, now and forevermore! Amen. (Jude, 1:24-25)

## Belief in the Last Day

Be careful, or your hearts will be weighed down with dissipation, drunkenness and the anxieties of life, and **that day will close on you unexpectedly like a trap. For it will come upon all those who live on the face of the whole earth.** Be always on the watch, and pray that you may be able to escape all that is about to happen... (Luke, 21:34-36)

But **in those days**, following that distress, **the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light...** (Mark, 13:24-25)

But **the day of the Lord will come like a thief [all of a sudden]. The heavens will disappear with a roar;** the elements will be destroyed by fire, and the earth and everything in it will be laid bare... That day will bring about the destruction of the heavens by fire, and the elements will melt in the heat. (Peter, 3:10-12)

**No one knows about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven... but only the Lord.** Be on guard! Be alert! You do not know **when that time will come.** (Mark, 13:32-33)

**No one knows about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven... but only the God.** (Matthew, 24:36)

**How dreadful it will be in those days for pregnant women and nursing mothers!... those will be days of distress unequaled from the beginning,** when God created the world, until now—and never to be equaled again. (Mark, 13:17-19)

**... will come on a day when he does not expect him and at an hour he is not aware of.** He will cut him to pieces and assign him a place with the hypocrites, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. (Matthew, 24:50-51)

**The wrath of God** is being revealed from heaven against all the godlessness and wickedness of men who suppress the truth by their wickedness... God has made it plain to them. (Romans, 1:18-19)

Now listen, you rich people, weep and wail because of the misery that is coming upon you. Your wealth has rotted, and moths have eaten your clothes. Your gold and silver are corroded. Their corrosion will testify against you and eat your flesh like fire. You have hoarded wealth in the last days. Look! The wages you failed to pay the workmen who mowed your fields are crying out against you. The cries of the harvesters have reached the ears of the Lord Almighty. You have lived on earth in luxury and self-indulgence. You have fattened yourselves in **the day of slaughter [day of reckoning].** (James, 5:1-5)

## **Belief in Paradise**

A faith and knowledge resting on **the hope of eternal life [paradise]**, which God, Who does not lie, promised before the beginning of time. (Titus, 1:2)

Jesus gave them this answer: "I tell you the truth, whoever hears my word and believes Him Who sent me has **eternal life [paradise] and will not be condemned...**" (John, 5:19-24)



**The Lord will rescue me from every evil attack and will bring me safely to His heavenly kingdom [paradise].** To Him be glory for ever and ever. Amen. (2 Timothy, 4: 18)

Do not work for food that spoils, but **for food that endures to eternal life [paradise]**... (John, 6:27)

I tell you the truth, he **who believes has everlasting life [paradise]**. (John, 6:47)

"Do not store up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. But **store up for yourselves treasures in heaven [the hereafter], where moth and rust do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal.** For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also. (Matthew, 6:19-21)

**"No eye has seen, no ear has heard, no mind has conceived what God has prepared for those who love Him."** (1 Corinthians, 2:9)

**Then the righteous will shine like the sun in the kingdom of their Lord [paradise].** He who has ears, let him hear!... This is how it will be at the end of the age. The angels will come and separate the wicked from the righteous and throw them into the fiery furnace, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. "Have you understood all these things?" Jesus asked. "Yes," they replied. (Matthew, 13:43-51)

From that time on Jesus began to preach, **"Repent, for the kingdom of heaven [the life of the hereafter] is near."** (Matthew, 4:17)

He began to teach them saying: "... for theirs is the kingdom of heaven **[paradise]... for they will be comforted.** Blessed are the meek! For they will inherit the earth. Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness! For **they will be filled.** Blessed are the merciful! For **they will be shown mercy.** Blessed are the pure in heart! For they will see God. [What is meant here is that righteous believers will see the manifestation of God's Glorious Personage as a blessing of paradise]... Blessed are those who are persecuted because of righteousness! **For theirs is the kingdom of God [paradise].** Blessed are you when people insult you, persecute you and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of me! Rejoice and be glad! Because **great is your reward in heaven [the hereafter],** for in the same way they persecuted the Prophets who were before you." (Matthew, 5:2-12)

At that time the disciples came to Jesus and asked, **"Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven [the hereafter]?"** He called a little child and had him stand among them. And he said: "I tell you the truth, unless you change and become like little children, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven [the hereafter]. Therefore, whoever humbles himself like this child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven [the hereafter]. (Matthew, 18:1-4)

I know that His [God's] command leads **to eternal life [paradise]**. So whatever I say is just what

God has told me to say." (John, 12:50)

Fight the good fight of the faith. Take hold of **the eternal life [paradise]** to which you were called when you made your good confession in the presence of many witnesses. (1 Timothy, 6:12)

Therefore, **since the promise of entering His rest [paradise] still stands, let us be careful that none of you be found to have fallen short of it.** For we also have had the Gospel preached to us, just as they did; but the message they heard was of no value to them, because those who heard did not combine it with faith. Now we who have believed **enter that rest [paradise]**, just as God has said, "So I declared on oath in my anger, 'They shall never enter My rest [paradise]'"... (Hebrews, 4:1-3)

**It still remains that some will enter that rest [paradise]**, and those who formerly had the Gospel preached to them did not go in, because of their disobedience. (Hebrews, 4:6)

Let us, therefore, **make every effort to enter that rest [paradise]**, so that no one will fall by following their example of disobedience. (Hebrews, 4:11)

And again in the passage above he says, "They shall never enter my rest **[paradise]**." (Hebrews, 4:5)

... And to whom did God swear that they would never enter **His rest [paradise]** if not to those who disobeyed? So we see that they were not able to enter, because of their unbelief. (Hebrews, 3:18-19)

... Away from me, all you evildoers!' **"There will be weeping there, and gnashing of teeth,** when you see Abraham, Isaac and Jacob and all the Prophets in the kingdom of God **[paradise]**, but **you yourselves thrown out.** (Luke, 13:27-28)

Then they will go away to eternal punishment [hell], **but the righteous to eternal life [paradise]**..." (Matthew, 25:46)

But in keeping with His promise **we are looking forward to a new heaven and a new earth, the home of righteousness.** So then, dear friends, since you are looking forward to this, make every effort to be found spotless, blameless and at peace with Him. (2 Peter 3:13-14)

For in the Gospel a righteousness from God is revealed, a righteousness that is by faith from first to last, just as it is written: **"The righteous will live [in paradise] by faith."** (Romans, 1:17)

**... Whoever believes in Him shall not perish but have eternal life [paradise].** (John, 3:16)

I tell you the truth," Jesus replied, "no one who has left home or brothers or sisters or mother or father or children or fields for me and the Gospel [for God's approval] will fail to receive a hundred times as much in this present age (homes, brothers, sisters, mothers, children and fields—and with them, persecutions) and in the age to come, **eternal life [paradise]**. But many who are first will be last, and the last first." (Mark, 10:29-31)

## Belief in Hell

But I will show you Whom you should fear: **Fear Him Who, after the killing of the body, has power to throw you into hell.** Yes, I tell you, fear Him. (Luke, 12:5)

**... into the darkness [hell], where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.** (Matthew, 22: 13)

As the weeds are pulled up and burned in the fire, so it will be at the end of the age... [God] will send out His angels, and they will weed... everything that causes sin and all who do evil... **They will throw them into the fiery furnace, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth...** "Once again, the kingdom of heaven [the questioning in the hereafter] is like a net that was let down into the lake and caught all kinds of fish. When it was full, the fishermen pulled it up on the shore. Then they sat down and collected the good fish in baskets, but threw the bad away. **This is how it will be at the end of the age. The angels will come and separate the wicked from the righteous and throw them into the fiery furnace [hell], where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.** (Matthew, 13:40-50)

... [The wrath of God] will come on a day when he does not expect him and at an hour he is not aware of. He will cut him to pieces and assign him a place **[hell]** with the hypocrites, **where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.** (Matthew, 24:50-51)

And you, Capernaum, will you be lifted up to the skies? No, **you will go down to the depths [hell].** If the miracles that were performed in you had been performed in Sodom, it would have remained to this day. But I tell you that it will be more bearable for Sodom on the day of judgment than for you. (Matthew, 11:23-24)

Then they **[the wicked] will go away to eternal punishment [hell]**, but the righteous to eternal life [paradise]." (Matthew, 25:46)

... Away from me, all you evildoers! **"There will be weeping there, and gnashing of teeth,** when you see Abraham, Isaac and Jacob and all the Prophets in the kingdom of God, **but you yourselves thrown out.** (Luke, 13:27-28)

And you, Capernaum, will you be lifted up to the skies? No, **you will go down to the depths [hell]...** But I tell you that it will be more bearable for Sodom on the day of judgment than for you. (Matthew, 11:23-24)

The time came when the beggar died... The rich man also died and was buried. **In hell, where he was in torment,** he looked up and saw Abraham far away, with Lazarus by his side. So he called to him, '... Father Abraham, have pity on me and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue, because **I am in agony in this fire.**' But Abraham replied, 'Son, remember that in your lifetime you received your good things, while Lazarus received bad things, but now he is comforted here and you are in agony. And besides all this, between us and you a great chasm has

been fixed, **so that those who want to go from here [paradise] to you cannot, nor can anyone cross over from there [hell] to us.'** (Luke, 16:22-26)

You snakes! You brood of vipers! **How will you escape being condemned to hell?** Therefore I am sending you prophets and wise men and teachers. Some of them you will kill... others you will flog in your synagogues and pursue from town to town. (Matthew, 23:33-34)

# BELIEF IN TIMELESSNESS AND DESTINY ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL

For it is by grace [by the grace of God] you have been saved, through faith and this not from yourselves, it is the gift of God not by works, so that no one can boast. For we are God's masterpiece... **to do good works, which God prepared in advance for us to do.** (Ephesians, 2:8-10)

... The remnant of men may seek the Lord, and all the Gentiles... **says the Lord, Who does these things' that have been known for ages.** (Acts, 15:17-18)

... **Your Lord knows what you need before you ask Him.** (Mathew, 6:8)

... He was named Jesus, **the name the angel had given him [by the will of God] before he had been conceived.** (Luke, 2:21)

... I want those You have given me to be with me where I am, and to see my glory, the glory You [God] have given me because **You loved me before the creation of the world...** though the world does not know You, I know You, and they know that You have sent me. (John, 17:24-25)

But do not forget this one thing, dear friends: **With the Lord a day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years are like a day...** (2 Peter, 3:8)

**He was chosen before the creation of the world, but was revealed in these last times for your sake...** you believe in God... and so your faith and hope are in God. (1 Peter, 1:20-21)

Whoever does not believe [in God] **stands condemned already...** (John, 3:18)

For He [God] **chose us... before the creation of the world** to be holy and blameless in His Sight... **He predestined us to be adopted as His [servants]...** in accordance with His pleasure and will. (Ephesians, 1:4-5)

... God, Who has saved us and called us to a holy life not because of anything we have done but because of His own purpose and grace. **This grace was given us in Christ Jesus [in our obeying Jesus for the approval of God] before the beginning of time, but it has now been revealed through the appearing of... Christ Jesus...** (2 Timothy, 1:8-10)

**The sins of some men are obvious, reaching the place of judgment ahead of them...** good

deeds are obvious... (1 Timothy, 5:24-25)

For **we know**, brothers loved by God, that **He has chosen you [as believers]**. (1 Thessalonians, 1:4)

... **A wisdom... that God destined for our glory before time began**. None of the rulers of this age understood it... However, as it is written: "No eye has seen, no ear has heard, no mind has conceived what God has prepared for those who love Him." (1 Corinthians, 2:7-9)

At this they tried to seize him [Jesus], but no one laid a hand on him, because **his time had not yet come**. (John, 7:30)

He [Jesus] spoke these words while teaching in the temple area near the place where the offerings were put. Yet no one seized him, because **his time had not yet come**. (John, 8:20)

... **He [Jesus] must remain in heaven [in the Presence of God] until the time comes for God to restore everything, as He promised long ago through His holy prophets**. (Acts, 3:18-21)

[They]... met together... to conspire against your holy servant Jesus... **They did what Your power and will had decided beforehand should happen**. (Acts, 4:27-28)

For truly in this city there were gathered together against Your holy servant Jesus... **They did what Your power and will had decided beforehand should happen**. (Acts, 4:27-28)

Blessed is she who has believed that **what the Lord has said to her will be accomplished!** (Luke, 1:45)

From: Paul, ... called to be an apostle and set apart for God's Gospel, which **He promised beforehand** through His prophets **in the Holy Scriptures**. (Romans, 1:2)

I am not referring to all of you; I know [by the will of God] those I have chosen. But **this is to fulfill the scripture**: 'He who shares my bread has lifted up his heel against me.' **I am [by the will of God] telling you now before it happens, so that when it does happen you will believe that I am he**. (John, 13:18-19)

And we know that in all things God works for the good of those who love Him, **who have been called [to belief] according to His purpose...** And those **He predestined, He also called; those He called**, He also justified; those He justified, He also glorified. (Romans, 8:28-30)

What if He [God] did this to make the riches of His glory known to **the objects of His mercy, whom He prepared in advance for glory**—even us, whom He also called, not only from the Jews but also from the Gentiles? (Romans, 9:23-24)

Paul, a servant of God and an apostle of Jesus Christ for the faith of God's elect and the knowledge of the truth that leads to godliness a faith and knowledge resting **on the hope of eternal life**, which God, Who does not lie, **promised before the beginning of time**, and at His appointed season He

brought His word to light through the preaching entrusted to me by the command of God, our Savior. (Titus, 1:1-3)

And he swore by Him Who lives for ever and ever, Who created the heavens and all that is in them, the earth and all that is in it, and the sea and all that is in it, and said, "... **The mystery of God will be accomplished, just as He announced to His servants the prophets.**" (Revelation, 10:6-7)

But we ought always to thank God for you, brothers loved by the Lord, because from **the beginning God chose you [created you in destiny as believers] to be saved... through belief in the truth.** (2 Thessalonians, 2:13)

He [Jesus] said to them: "It is not for you to **know the times or dates... [God] has set** by His own authority. (Acts, 1:7)

When the Gentiles heard this, they were glad and honored the word of the Lord; and **all who were appointed for eternal life believed.** (Acts, 13:48)

... to strengthen and encourage you in your faith, so that no one would be unsettled by these trials. **You know quite well that we were destined for them.** (1 Thessalonians, 3:2-3)

They [those who do not believe] stumble because they disobey the message—**which is also what they were destined for [they are created in destiny as to fail].** (1 Peter, 2:8)

... **The appearing of... Jesus Christ, which God will bring about in His own time**—God, the blessed and only Ruler, the King of kings and Lord of lords, Who alone is immortal and Who lives in unapproachable light, Whom no one has seen or can see. To Him be honor and might forever. Amen. (1 Timothy, 6:14-16)

The Son of Man [Jesus] **will go as it has been decreed...** (Luke, 22:22)

## BELIEF IN ANGELS ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL

**The angel answered, "I am Gabriel. I stand in the Presence of God, and I have been sent to speak to you and to tell you this good news."** (Luke, 1:19)

For it is written: **'He will command His angels concerning you to guard you carefully; they will lift you up in their hands, so that you will not strike your foot against a stone.'** [They will protect Jesus (as) from any harm.] (Luke, 4:10-11)

**... God sent the angel Gabriel to... a virgin.** The virgin's name was Mary. **The angel went to her and said, "Greetings, you who are highly favored! The Lord is with you."** Mary was greatly troubled at his words and wondered what kind of greeting this might be. **But the angel said to her, "Do not be afraid, Mary, you have found favor with God. You will be with child and give birth to a son, and you are to give him the name Jesus. He will be great... How will this be," Mary asked the angel, "since I am a virgin?" The angel answered...** For nothing is impossible with God. "I am the Lord's servant," Mary answered. "May it be to me as you have said." Then the angel left her. (Luke, 1:26-38)

**An angel of the Lord appeared to them...** and they were terrified. **But the angel said to them, "Do not be afraid.** I bring you good news of great joy that will be for all the people..." (Luke, 2:9-11)

Jesus said to him, "Away from me, satan! For it is written: 'Worship the Lord your God, and serve Him only. Then the devil left him, and **angels came and attended him.**'" (Matthew, 4:10-11)

As the weeds are pulled up and burned in the fire, so it will be at the end of the age... **God will send out His angels, and they will weed out of His kingdom everything that causes sin and all who do evil.** They will throw them into the fiery furnace... (Matthew, 13:40-42)

This is how it will be at the end of the age. **The angels will come and separate the wicked from the righteous** and throw them into the fiery furnace, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. "Have you understood all these things?" Jesus asked. (Matthew, 13:49-50)

**He [God] will send his angels with a loud trumpet call,** and they will gather his elect from the four winds, from one end of the heavens to the other. (Matthew, 24:31; Mark, 13:26-27)



**No one knows about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven,** nor Jesus, but only the God. (Matthew, 24:36)

Jesus said to him... "Do you think I cannot call on God, and He will at once put at my disposal more than **twelve legions of angels?**" (Matthew, 26:52-53; Mark, 13:32)

... For **an angel of the Lord came down from heaven...** His appearance was like lightning, and his clothes were white as snow. The guards were so afraid of him that they shook and became like dead men. The angel said to the women, "Do not be afraid"... (Matthew, 28:2-5)

But after he had considered this, **an angel of the Lord** appeared to him in a dream and said, "... Do not be afraid... She will give birth to a son, and you are to give him the name Jesus..." (Matthew, 1:20-21)

When Joseph woke up, **he did what the angel of the Lord had commanded him...** (Matthew, 1:24)

When they had gone, **an angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream.** "Get up," he said, "take the child and his mother and escape to Egypt. Stay there until I tell you, for Herod is going to search for the child to kill him." (Matthew, 2:13)

After Herod died, **an angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt** and said, "Get up, take the child and his mother and go to the land of Israel, for those who were trying to take the child's life are dead." (Matthew, 2:19-20)

... All the assembled worshipers were praying outside. Then **an angel of the Lord appeared to him...** When **Zechariah saw him, he was startled and was gripped with fear. But the angel said to him: "Do not be afraid, Zechariah; your prayer has been heard.** Your wife Elizabeth will bear you a son, and you are to give him the name John. He will be a joy and delight to you, many will rejoice because of his birth, for he will be great in the Sight of the Lord. He is never to take wine or other fermented drink, and he will be filled with the God's Spirit [He will be of a morality that pleases God] even from birth. Many of the people of Israel will he bring back to the Lord their God... **Zechariah asked the angel,** "How can I be sure of this? I am an old man and my wife is well along in years." The angel answered, "**I am Gabriel. I stand in the Presence of God, and I have been sent to speak to you and to tell you this good news...** And now you will be silent and not able to speak until the day this happens..." (Luke, 1:10-20)

**Suddenly an angel of the Lord appeared** and a light shone in the cell. He struck Peter on the side and woke him up. "Quick, get up!" he said, and the chains fell off Peter's wrists. **Then the angel said to him, "Put on your clothes and sandals."** And Peter did so. **"Wrap your cloak around you and follow me," the angel told him.**

Peter followed him out of the prison, but **he had no idea that what the angel was doing was really happening**; he thought he was seeing a vision... Then Peter came to himself and **said, "Now I know without a doubt that the Lord sent His angel and rescued me** from Herod's clutches and from everything the Jewish people were anticipating." (Acts, 12:7-11)

**Then I saw another angel** flying in midair, and **he had the eternal Gospel to proclaim to those who live on the earth—to every nation, tribe, language and people [He was conveying God's revelation to mankind]**... He said in a loud voice, "Fear God and give Him glory, because the hour of His judgment has come. Worship Him Who made the heavens, the earth, the sea and the springs of water." (Revelation, 14:6-7)

Now Christ has gone to heaven. He is seated in the place of honor next to God, and all **the angels** and authorities and powers accept his authority. (1 Peter, 3:22)

**Are not all angels ministering spirits sent to serve those who will inherit salvation?** (Hebrews, 1:14)

**But during the night an angel of the Lord opened the doors of the jail and brought them out.** "Go, stand in the temple courts," he said, "and tell the people the full message of this new life." (Acts, 5:19-20)

... **You who have received the law** [The commandments and prohibitions which are the revelations of God] **that was put into effect through angels** but have not obeyed it... (Acts, 7:53)

Now **an angel of the Lord said to Philip**, "Go south to the road—the desert road—that goes down from Jerusalem to Gaza." So he started out... (Acts, 8:26-27)

One day at about three in the afternoon he had a vision. **He distinctly saw an angel of God, who came to him and said, "Cornelius!"** (Acts, 10:3)

... They came and told us that they had seen a vision of **angels, who said he was alive.** (Luke, 24:23)

**A holy angel told him** to have you come to his house so that he could hear what you have to say. (Acts, 10:22)

... **He told us how he had seen an angel appear in his house and say**, 'Send to Joppa for Simon who is called Peter. He will bring you a message through which you and all your household will be saved.' (Acts, 11:13-14)

On the appointed day Herod, wearing his royal robes, sat on his throne and delivered a public address to the people. They shouted... Immediately, because Herod did not give

praise to God, **an angel of the Lord struck him down [took his life]** and he was eaten by worms and died. (Acts, 12:21-23)

For it seems to me that God has put us apostles on display at the end of the procession, like men condemned to die in the arena. We have been made a spectacle to the whole universe, **to angels as well as to men.** (1 Corinthians, 4:9)

If I speak **in the tongues** of men and **of angels**, but have not love, I am only a resounding gong or a clanging cymbal. (1 Corinthians, 13:1)

**This will happen when... Jesus is revealed from heaven [descend from God's Sight] in blazing fire with his powerful angels.** (2 Thessalonians, 1:7)

**He [Jesus],** appeared in a body... **was seen by angels**, was preached among the nations, was believed on in the world, was taken up in glory. (1 Timothy, 3:16)

I charge you, in the Sight of God and Christ Jesus and **the elect angels**, to keep these instructions without partiality, and to do nothing out of favoritism. Do not be hasty in the laying on of hands, and do not share in the sins of others. Keep yourself pure. (1 Timothy, 5:21-22)

For if the **message spoken by angels was binding**, and every violation and disobedience received its just punishment, how shall we escape if we ignore such a great salvation? (Hebrews, 2:2-3)

... Yet **even angels, although they are stronger and more powerful**, do not bring slanderous accusations against such beings in the Presence of the Lord. (2 Peter, 2:11)

But even **the archangel Michael**... did not dare to bring a slanderous accusation against him... (Jude, 1:9)

He [God] made it known by sending **His angel** to His servant John... (Revelation, 1:1)

... And **I saw a mighty angel** proclaiming in a loud voice, "Who is worthy to break the seals and open the scroll?" But no one in heaven or on earth or under the earth could open the scroll or even look inside it. (Revelation, 5:2-3)

Then **I saw another mighty angel coming down from heaven**... (Revelation, 10:1)

... He was named Jesus, the **name the angel had given him** before he had been conceived. (Luke, 2:21)

# REQUIREMENTS OF FAITH ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL

## To Give Thanks to God

**Give thanks in all circumstances, for this is God's will...** (1 Thessalonians, 5:18)

And in their prayers for you their hearts will go out to you, because of the surpassing grace God has given you. **Thanks be to God for His indescribable gift!** (2 Corinthians, 9:14-15)

He [Jesus] told the crowd to sit down on the ground. When **he had taken the seven loaves and given thanks, he broke them** and gave them to his disciples to set before the people, and they did so. They had a few small fish as well; **he gave thanks for them also and told the disciples to distribute them.** (Mark, 8:6-7)

For everything God created is good, and nothing is to be rejected **if it is received with thanksgiving.** (1 Timothy, 4:4)

Devote yourselves to prayer, **being** watchful and **thankful.** (Colossians, 4:2)

He who regards one day as special, does so to the Lord. **He who eats meat, eats to the Lord, for he gives thanks to God; and he who abstains, does so to the Lord and gives thanks to God.** (Romans, 14:6)

**But thanks be to God! He gives us the victory...** Therefore, my dear brothers, stand firm. Let nothing move you. Always give yourselves fully to the work of the Lord, because you know that your labor in the Lord is not in vain... (1 Corinthians, 15:57-58)

Nor should there be obscenity, foolish talk or coarse joking, which are out of place, **but rather thanksgiving.** (Ephesians, 5:4)

Speak to one another with psalms, hymns and spiritual songs. Sing and make music in your heart to the Lord, **always giving thanks to God... for everything...** Submit to one another out of reverence for Christ [for the approval of God]. (Ephesians, 5:19-21)

**I thank my God every time I remember you.** (Philippians, 1:3)

... **And be thankful.** Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly as you teach and admonish one another with all wisdom, and as you sing psalms, hymns and spiritual **songs with gratitude in your**

**hearts to God.** And whatever you do, whether in word or deed, do it... **giving thanks to God...** (Colossians, 3:15-17)

**We always thank God for all of you,** mentioning you in our prayers. We continually remember before our God... your work produced by faith, your labor prompted by love, and your endurance inspired by hope in... Jesus Christ. (1 Thessalonians, 1:2-3)

Rooted and built up in Him [devotion to God], strengthened in the faith as you were taught, and **overflowing with thankfulness.** (Colossians, 2:7)

At that time Jesus... said, "**I praise You...** Lord of heaven and earth, because You have hidden these things from the wise and learned, and revealed them to little children. Yes, God, for this was Your good pleasure. (Luke, 10:21; Matthew, 11:25)

If I send them home hungry, they will collapse on the way, because some of them have come a long distance." His [Jesus] disciples answered, "But where in this remote place can anyone get enough bread to feed them?" "How many loaves do you have?" Jesus asked. "Seven," they replied. He told the crowd to sit down on the ground. **When he had taken the seven loaves and given thanks,** he broke them and gave them to his disciples to set before the people, and they did so. They had a few small fish as well; **he gave thanks for them also and told the disciples to distribute them. The people ate and were satisfied.** Afterward the disciples picked up seven basketfuls of broken pieces that were left over. About four thousand men were present. (Mark, 8:3-10)

**And we also thank God continually because,** when you received the word of God, which you heard from us, you accepted it not as the word of men, but as it actually is, the word of God, which is at work in you who believe. (1 Thessalonians, 2:13)

... And the twenty-four elders, fell on their faces and worshiped God, saying: "**We give thanks to You, Lord God Almighty, the One Who is and Who was, because You have taken Your great power...** (Revelation, 11:16-17)

"How many loaves do you have?" Jesus asked. "Seven," they replied, "and a few small fish." He told the crowd to sit down on the ground. **Then he took the seven loaves and the fish, and when he had given thanks, he broke them and gave them to the disciples,** and they in turn to the people. They all ate and were satisfied. Afterward the disciples picked up seven basketfuls of broken pieces that were left over. The number of those who ate was four thousand, besides women and children. (Matthew, 15:34-38)

Coming up to them at that very moment, she **gave thanks to God** and spoke about the child to all who were looking forward to the redemption of Jerusalem. (Luke, 2:38)

For this reason, ever since I heard about your faith in Jesus [as the Prophet of God] and your love for all the saints [who devote themselves to God], **I have not stopped giving thanks [to God] for you, remembering you in my prayers.** (Ephesians, 1:15-16)

Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, **by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God.** (Philippians, 4:6)

... They fell down on their faces... and worshiped God, saying: "Amen! Praise and glory and wisdom and **thanks and honor and power and strength be to our God for ever and ever.** Amen!" (Revelation, 7:11-12)

**But thanks be to God** that, though you used to be slaves to sin, you wholeheartedly obeyed the form of teaching to which you were entrusted. You have been set free from sin and have become slaves to righteousness. (Romans, 6:17-18)

For in my inner being I delight in God's law [to obey God's commandments and prohibitions]; **thanks be to God...** So then, I myself in my mind am a slave to God's law... (Romans, 7:22, 25)

The Pharisee stood up and prayed about himself: '**God, I thank you** that I am not like other men—robbers, evildoers, adulterers—or even like this tax collector.' (Luke, 18:11)

First, **I thank my God... for all of you,** because your faith is being reported all over the world. (Romans, 1:8)

... to confirm the promises made to the patriarchs so that the Gentiles may glorify God for His mercy, as it is written: "**Therefore I will praise You among the Gentiles;** I will sing hymns to Your name." (Romans, 15:8-9)

Grace and peace to you from God... **I always thank God** for you because of His grace given you in Christ Jesus. (1 Corinthians, 1:3-4)

... **I am thankful...** (1 Corinthians, 1:15)

**If I take part in the meal with thankfulness,** why am I denounced because of something I thank God for? So whether you eat or drink or whatever you do, do it all for the glory of God. (1 Corinthians, 10:30-31)

For I received from the Lord what I also passed on to you: Jesus... **took bread, and when he had given thanks, he broke it...** (1 Corinthians, 11:23-24)

Now He Who supplies seed to the sower and bread for food will also supply and increase your store of seed and will enlarge the harvest of your righteousness. You will be made rich in every way so that you can be generous on every occasion, and... **your generosity will result in thanksgiving to God.** This service that you perform is not only supplying the needs of God's people [who devote themselves to God] **but is also overflowing in many expressions of thanks to God.** (2 Corinthians, 9:10-12)

He [God] has delivered us from such a deadly peril, and He will deliver us. On Him we have set our hope that He will continue to deliver us, as you help us by your prayers. **Then many will give thanks [to God] on our behalf for the gracious favor granted us in answer to the prayers**

**of many.** (2 Corinthians, 1:10-11)

All this is for your benefit, **so that the grace that is reaching more and more people may cause thanksgiving to overflow to the glory of God.** (2 Corinthians, 4:15)

**But thanks be to God,** Who always leads us in triumphal procession in Christ and through us spreads everywhere the fragrance of the knowledge of Him. For we are to God the aroma of Christ among those who are being saved and those who are perishing. To the one we are the smell of death [the one who leads people to hell ]; to the other, the fragrance of life [the one who leads people to paradise]... (2 Corinthians, 2:14-16)

**I thank God,** Who put into the heart of Titus the same concern I have for you. For Titus not only welcomed our appeal, but he is coming to you with much enthusiasm and on his own initiative. (2 Corinthians, 8:16-17)

I urge, then, first of all, that requests, prayers, intercession **and thanksgiving** be made [to God] for everyone—for kings and all those in authority, that we may live peaceful and quiet lives in all godliness and holiness. (1 Timothy, 2:1-2)

**I thank God, whom I serve,** as my forefathers did, **with a clear conscience,** as night and day I constantly remember you in my prayers. (2 Timothy, 1:3)

Jesus replied, "They do not need to go away. You give them something to eat. We have here only five loaves of bread and two fish," they answered. "Bring them here to me," he [Jesus] said. And he directed the people to sit down on the grass. Taking the five loaves and the two fish and looking up to heaven, **he gave thanks and broke the loaves.** Then he gave them to the disciples, and the disciples gave them to the people. They all ate and were satisfied, and the disciples picked up twelve basketfuls of broken pieces that were left over. The number of those who ate was about five thousand men, besides women and children. (Matthew, 14:16-21)

**While they were eating, Jesus took bread, gave thanks and broke it,** and gave it to his disciples, saying, "Take and eat... **Then he took the cup, gave thanks** and offered it to them, saying, "Drink from it, all of you." (Matthew, 26:26-27; Mark 14:22-23)

"How many loaves do you have?" he asked. "Go and see." When they found out, they said, "Five—and two fish." Then Jesus directed them to have all the people sit down in groups on the green grass. So they sat down in groups of hundreds and fifties. Taking the five loaves and the two fish and looking up to heaven, **he [Jesus] gave thanks and broke the loaves.** Then he gave them to his disciples to set before the people. He also divided the two fish among them all. They all ate and were satisfied, and the disciples picked up twelve basketfuls of broken pieces of bread and fish. The number of the men who had eaten was five thousand. (Mark, 6:38-44)

He replied, "You give them something to eat." They answered, "We have only five loaves of bread and two fish—unless we go and buy food for all this crowd." (About five thousand men were there.) But he

said to his disciples, "Have them sit down in groups of about fifty each." The disciples did so, and everybody sat down. Taking the five loaves and the two fish and looking up to heaven, **he gave thanks** and broke them. Then he gave them to the disciples to set before the people. They all ate and were satisfied, and the disciples picked up twelve basketfuls of broken pieces that were left over. (Luke, 9:13-17)

When the hour came, Jesus and his apostles reclined at the table. And he said to them, "I have eagerly desired to eat this Passover with you... **After taking the cup, he gave thanks** and said, "Take this and divide it among you... **And he took bread, gave thanks and broke it**, and gave it to them..." (Luke, 22:14-19)

As they approached the village to which they were going, Jesus acted as if he were going farther. But they urged him strongly, "Stay with us, for it is nearly evening; the day is almost over." So he went in to stay with them. **When he was at the table with them, he took bread, gave thanks, broke it and began to give it to them.** (Luke, 24:28-30)

After he [Paul] said this, **he took some bread and gave thanks to God** in front of them all. Then he broke it and began to eat. (Acts, 27:34-35)

And so we came to Rome. The brothers there had heard that we were coming, and they traveled as far as the Forum of Appius and the Three Taverns to meet us. **At the sight of these men Paul thanked God and was encouraged.** (Acts, 28:15)

Another of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, spoke up, "Here is a boy with five small barley loaves and two small fish, but how far will they go among so many?" Jesus said, "Have the people sit down." There was plenty of grass in that place, and the men sat down, about five thousand of them. **Jesus then took the loaves, gave thanks, and distributed to those who were seated** as much as they wanted. He did the same with the fish. When they had all had enough to eat, he said to his disciples, "Gather the pieces that are left over. Let nothing be wasted." So they gathered them and filled twelve baskets with the pieces of the five barley loaves left over by those who had eaten. After the people saw the miraculous sign that Jesus did, they began to say, "Surely this is the Prophet who is to come into the world." (John, 6:8-14)

So they took away the stone. Then Jesus looked up and said, "**God, I thank You** that You have heard me [you answered my prayers]. I knew that You always hear me, but I said this for the benefit of the people standing here, that they may believe that You sent me." (John, 11:41-42)

... being strengthened with all power according to His glorious might so that you may have great endurance and patience, and joyfully **giving thanks to God**, Who has qualified you to share in the inheritance of the saints [who devoted themselves to God]... For He has rescued us from the dominion of darkness and brought us into the kingdom... (Colossians, 1:11-14)

**How can we thank God enough for you** in return for all the joy we have in the Presence of our



God because of you? Night and day we pray most earnestly that we may see you again and supply what is lacking in your faith. (1 Thessalonians, 3:9-10)

**We ought always to thank God for you**, brothers, and rightly so, because your faith is growing more and more, and the love every one of you has for each other is increasing. (2 Thessalonians, 1:3)

**But we ought always to thank God for you**, brothers loved by the Lord, because from the beginning God chose you to be saved... through belief in the truth. (2 Thessalonians, 2:13)

**We always thank God**... when we pray for you, because we have heard of your faith in Christ Jesus [as the Prophet of God] and of the love you have for all the saints [who devote themselves to God]. (Colossians, 1:3-4)

**... I always thank my God** as I remember you in my prayers, because I hear about your faith in Jesus [as the Prophet of God] and your love for all the saints [who devote themselves to God]. (Philemon, 1:4-5)

For although they knew God, they neither glorified Him as God nor gave thanks to Him, but their thinking became futile and their foolish hearts were darkened. (Romans, 1:21)

## **To Submit to God\***

*\* To know that all forms of difficulty and tribulation come from God, to trust in God alone and to beg for help from Him.*

So, if you think you are standing firm, be careful that you don't fall! **No temptation has seized you except what is common to man. And God is faithful; He will not let you be tempted beyond what you can bear. But when you are tempted, He will also provide a way out so that you can stand up under it.** (1 Corinthians, 10:12-13)

Therefore, my dear brothers, stand firm. Let nothing move you. **Always give yourselves fully to the work of the Lord, because you know that your labor in the Lord is not in vain.** (1 Corinthians, 15:58)

**But by faith we eagerly await through the Spirit of God the righteousness** for which we hope [in the hereafter]. (Galatians, 5:5)

Rather, **as servants of God we commend ourselves in every way: in great endurance; in troubles, hardships and distresses; in beatings, imprisonments and riots; in hard work, sleepless nights and hunger;** in purity, understanding, patience and kindness... and in sincere love; in truthful speech and in the power of God; with weapons of righteousness in the right hand and in the left; through glory and dishonor, **bad report and good report;** genuine, yet regarded as

impostors. (2 Corinthians, 6:4-8)

**For though we live in the world, we do not wage war [strive against] as the world does.** The [spiritual] weapons we fight [our ideological struggle] with are not the weapons of the world. **On the contrary, they have divine power [of faith] to demolish strongholds.** (2 Corinthians, 10:3-4)

But we ought always to thank God for you, brothers loved by the Lord, because from the beginning God chose you to be saved... through belief in the truth... **So then, brothers, stand firm and hold to the teachings we passed on to you, whether by word of mouth or by letter. May... God... Who loved us and by His grace gave us eternal encouragement and good hope, encourage your hearts and strengthen you in every good deed and word.** (2 Thessalonians, 2:13-17)

**But even if you should suffer for what is right, you are blessed. "Do not fear what they fear; do not be frightened."** (1 Peter, 3:14)

So **do not be afraid of them.** There is nothing concealed that will not be disclosed, or hidden that will not be made known [to God]... (Matthew, 10:26-28)

Finally, **be strong in the Lord and in His mighty power.** Put on the full **[spiritual]** armor of God so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes. For our struggle [ideological struggle] is... against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil ... Therefore **put on the full [spiritual] armor of God, so that when the day of evil comes, you may be able to stand** your ground, and after you have done everything, to stand. Stand firm then, with the belt of truth buckled around your waist, with the breastplate of righteousness in place, and with your feet fitted with the readiness that comes from the Gospel of peace. In addition to all this, **take up the shield of faith**, with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one. (Ephesians, 6:10-16)

... Since the day we heard about you, we have not stopped praying for you and asking God to fill you with the knowledge of His will through all spiritual wisdom and understanding. And we pray this in order that you may live a life worthy of the Lord and may please Him in every way: bearing fruit in every good work, growing in the knowledge of God, **being strengthened with all power according to His glorious might so that you may have great endurance and patience, and joyfully.** (Colossians, 1:9-11)

But Timothy has just now come to us from you and has brought good news about your faith and love. He has told us that you always have pleasant memories of us and that you long to see us, just as we also long to see you. Therefore, brothers, **in all our distress and persecution we were encouraged about you because of your faith. For now we really live, since you are standing firm in the Lord.** (1 Thessalonians, 3:6-8)

**And why do you worry about clothes? See how the lilies of the field grow. They do not labor or spin.** (Matthew, 6:28-29)

**For it is commendable if a man bears up under the pain of unjust suffering because he is conscious of God.** But how is it to your credit if you receive a beating for doing wrong and endure it? **But if you suffer for doing good and you endure it, this is commendable before God.** To this [for God's good pleasure] you were called... that you should follow in his [Christ's] steps. "He committed no sin, and no deceit was found in his mouth." When they hurled their insults at him, he did not retaliate; when he suffered, he made no threats. **Instead, he entrusted himself to Him Who judges justly.** (1 Peter, 2:19-23)

You will be betrayed even by parents, brothers, relatives and friends, and they will put some of you to death. All men will hate you because of me [for following me for God's good pleasure]. But not a hair of your head will perish. **By standing firm you will gain life [the infinite life in paradise].** (Luke, 21:16-19)

This is the verdict: Light has come into the world, but men loved darkness instead of light because their deeds were evil. Everyone who does evil hates the light, and will not come into the light for fear that his deeds will be exposed. But **whoever lives by the truth comes into the light, so that it may be seen plainly that what he has done has been done through God.** (John, 3:19-21)

... Through Whom we have gained access by faith into this grace in which we now stand. And we rejoice in the hope of the glory [mercy and good pleasure] of God. Not only so, **but we also rejoice in our sufferings, because we know that suffering produces perseverance; perseverance, character; and character, hope.** And hope does not disappoint us. (Romans, 5:2-5)

**And so after waiting patiently, Abraham** received what was promised. (Hebrew, 6:15)

**Consider it pure joy, my brothers, whenever you face trials of many kinds, because you know that the testing of your faith develops perseverance.** Perseverance must finish its work so that you may be mature and complete, not lacking anything. If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, Who gives generously to all...and it will be given to him. But when he asks, he must believe and not doubt, because he who doubts is like a wave of the sea, blown and tossed by the wind. (James, 1:2-6)

You became imitators of us and of the Lord; in **spite of severe suffering, you welcomed the message with the joy given by God.** (1 Thessalonians, 1:1-6)

Therefore, among God's churches we boast about your perseverance and faith **in all the persecutions and trials you are enduring.** All this is evidence that God's judgment is right, and as a result you will be counted worthy of the kingdom of **God [paradise], for which you are suffering. God is just: He will pay back trouble to those who trouble you and give relief to you who are troubled, and to us as well.** (2 Thessalonians, 1:4-7)

For the time will come when men will not put up with sound doctrine. Instead, to suit their own desires, they will gather around them a great number of teachers to say what their itching ears want to hear. They will turn their ears away from the truth and turn aside to myths. But you, keep your head in all situations, **endure hardship**, do the work of an evangelist, discharge all the duties of your ministry. (2 Timothy, 4:3-5)

**Do not be afraid of what you are about to suffer...** You will suffer persecution for ten days. **Be faithful, even to the point of death**, and I will give you the crown of life [the eternal life in paradise]. (Revelation, 2:10)

But **the Lord is faithful, and He will strengthen and protect you from the evil one**. (2 Thessalonians, 3:3)

**Then Jesus said to his disciples: "Therefore I tell you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat; or about your body, what you will wear...** Consider the ravens: They do not sow or reap, they have no storeroom or barn; yet God feeds them... Who of you by worrying can add a single hour to his life? Since you cannot do this very little thing, why do you worry about the rest? Consider how the lilies grow. They do not labor or spin. Yet I tell you, not even Solomon in all his splendor was dressed like one of these. If that is how God clothes the grass of the field, which is here today, and tomorrow is thrown into the fire, how much more will he clothe you, O you of little faith! And do not set your heart on what you will eat or drink; do not worry about it. For the pagan world runs after all such things, and your God knows that you need them. But seek His kingdom, and these things will be given to you as well. (Luke, 12:22-31; Matthew 6:25-33)

In this you greatly rejoice, **though now for a little while you may have had to suffer...** (1 Peter, 1:6)

**And I am confident in the Lord** that I myself will come soon. (Philippians, 2:24)

And the Gospel must first be preached to all nations. Whenever you are arrested and brought to trial, **do not worry beforehand about what to say. Just say whatever is given you at the time**, for it is not you speaking, but God. (Mark, 13:10-11)

When you are brought before synagogues, rulers and authorities, **do not worry about how you will defend yourselves or what you will say**, for God will teach you at that time what you should say. (Luke, 12:11-12)

... For **your Lord knows what you need before you ask Him**. "This, then, is how you should pray: '... And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one.' For Yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen." (Matthew, 6:8-13)

So do not be ashamed to testify [to approve the signs of God's existence] about our Lord, or ashamed of me, His prisoner. **But join with me in suffering for the Gospel by the power of God**, Who has saved us and called us to a holy life—not because of anything we have done but because of His own

purpose and grace. (2 Timothy, 1:8-9)

Enter through the narrow gate. For wide is the gate and broad is the road that leads to destruction, and many enter through it. **But small is the gate and narrow the road that leads to life [the eternal one in paradise]**, and only a few find it. (Matthew, 7:13-14)

But if we judged ourselves, we would not come under judgment. **When we are judged by the Lord, we are being disciplined so that we will not be condemned with the world.** (1 Corinthians, 11:31-32)

Therefore, the promise comes by faith, so that it may be by grace and may be guaranteed to all Abraham's offspring... Abraham **in hope believed** and so became the father of many nations, just as it had been said to him, **[the promise of God] "So shall your offspring be."** **Without weakening in his faith**, he faced the fact that his body was as good as dead—since he was about a hundred years old—and that Sarah's womb was also dead. (Romans, 4:16-19)

**For while we are in this tent, we groan and are burdened**, because we do not wish to be unclothed but to be clothed with our heavenly dwelling, so that what is mortal may be swallowed up by life. Now it is God Who has made us for this very purpose and has given us the Spirit as a deposit, guaranteeing what is to come. **Therefore we are always confident... We live by faith, not by sight.** (2 Corinthians, 5:4-7)

Remember those earlier days after you had received the light, **when you stood your ground in a great contest in the face of suffering**. Sometimes you were publicly exposed to insult and persecution; at other times you stood side by side with those who were so treated. You sympathized with those in prison and joyfully accepted the confiscation of your property, because you knew that you yourselves had better and lasting possessions. So **do not throw away your confidence; it will be richly rewarded.** (Hebrews, 10:32-35)

And without faith it is impossible to please God, because anyone who comes to Him must believe that He exists and that He rewards those who earnestly seek Him. By faith Noah, when warned about things not yet seen, in holy fear built an ark to save his family. By his faith he condemned the world and **became heir of the righteousness that comes by faith. By faith Abraham, when called to go to a place he would later receive as his inheritance, obeyed and went, even though he did not know where he was going. By faith he made his home in the promised land like a stranger in a foreign country**; he lived in tents, as did Isaac and Jacob, who were heirs with him of the same promise. For he was looking forward to the city with foundations, whose architect and builder is God. (Hebrews, 11:6-10)

From Miletus, Paul sent to Ephesus for the elders of the church. When they arrived, he said to them: "You know how I lived the whole time I was with you, from the first day I came into the province of Asia. **I served the Lord with great humility and with tears, although I was severely tested by the plots of the Jews. You know that I have not hesitated to preach anything that**

**would be helpful to you but have taught you publicly and from house to house.** I have declared to both Jews and Greeks that they must turn to God in repentance and have faith in... Jesus [that he is God's messenger]. "And now, compelled by... [God], I am going to Jerusalem, **not knowing what will happen to me there. I only know that in every city... warns me that prison and hardships are facing me. However, I consider my life worth nothing to me, if only I may finish the race** and complete the task Jesus has given me **[for God's good pleasure] —the task of testifying to the Gospel of God's grace.** (Acts, 20:17-24)

Who shall separate us from the love of Christ [for God's good pleasure]? **Shall trouble or hardship or persecution or famine or nakedness or danger or sword? As it is written: "For your sake [for God's good pleasure] we face death all day long; we are considered as sheep to be slaughtered."** For I am convinced that neither death nor life, nor any powers, neither height nor depth, nor anything else in all creation, will be able to separate us from the love of God... (Romans, 8:35-39)

And now, brothers, we want you to know about the grace that God has given the Macedonian churches. **Out of the most severe trial**, their overflowing joy and their extreme poverty welled up in rich generosity. For I testify that they gave as much as they were able, and even beyond their ability. Entirely on their own. (2 Corinthians, 8:1-3)

**... He chose to be mistreated along with the people of God [those who have genuine faith] rather than to enjoy the pleasures... for a short time. He regarded disgrace for the sake of God as of greater value than the treasures of Egypt, because he was looking ahead to his reward [in the hereafter]. By faith he left Egypt, not fearing the king's anger...** By faith the people passed through the Red Sea as on dry land; but when the Egyptians tried to do so, they were drowned. **By faith the walls of Jericho fell**, after the people had marched around them for seven days. (Hebrews, 11:24-30)

Humble yourselves, that He [God] may lift you up in due time. **Cast all your anxiety on Him [put your trust in God], because He cares for you.** Be self-controlled and alert. Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour. **Resist him, standing firm in the faith, because you know that your brothers throughout the world are undergoing the same kind of sufferings.** And the God of all grace, Who called you to His eternal glory... **after you have suffered a little while, will Himself restore you and make you strong, firm and steadfast.** (1 Peter, 5:6-10)

Those along the path are the ones who hear, and then the devil comes and takes away the word from their hearts, so that they may not believe and be saved. Those on the rock are the ones who receive the word with joy when they hear it, but they have no root. **They believe for a while, but in the time of testing they fall away.** The seed that fell among thorns stands for those who hear, but as they go on their way they are choked by life's worries, riches and pleasures, and they do not mature. **But the seed on good soil stands for those with a noble and good heart, who hear the**

**word, retain it, and by persevering produce a crop.** (Luke, 8:12-15)

Jesus said to them, "The kings of the Gentiles lord it over them; and those who exercise authority over them call themselves Benefactors. But you are not to be like that. Instead, the greatest among you should be like the youngest, and the one who rules like the one who serves. For who is greater, the one who is at the table or the one who serves? Is it not the one who is at the table? But I am among you as one who serves. **You are those who have stood by me [for God's good pleasure] in my trials.**" (Luke, 22:25-28)

**Praise be to the God...** of compassion and the God **Who comforts us in all our troubles, so that we can comfort those in any trouble with the comfort we ourselves have received from God...** If we are distressed, it is for your comfort and salvation; if we are comforted, it is for your comfort, **which produces in you patient endurance of the same sufferings we suffer.** And our hope for you is firm, because we know that just as you share in our sufferings, so also you share in our comfort. (2 Corinthians, 1:3-7)

**These are they who have come out of the great tribulation.** Therefore, "they serve Him [God] day and night in His temple"... (Revelation, 7:14-15)

Looking at his disciples, he [Jesus] said: "Blessed are you who are poor, for yours is the kingdom of God [paradise]. Blessed are you who hunger now, for you will be satisfied... **Blessed are you when men hate you, when they exclude you and insult you and reject your name as evil,** because of the Son of Man [Jesus] **[for God's sake].**" Rejoice in that day and leap for joy, **because great is your reward in heaven.** For that is how their fathers treated the prophets. (Luke, 6:20-23)

But seek first His [God's] Kingdom and His righteousness, and all these things will be given to you as well. Therefore **do not worry about tomorrow...** (Matthew, 6:33-34)

... But this happened that we might not rely on ourselves but on God, Who raises the dead. He has delivered us from such a deadly peril, and He will deliver us. **On Him we have set our hope.** (2 Corinthians, 1:9-10)

... Be content with what you have... So we say with confidence, "**The Lord is my helper; I will not be afraid. What can man do to me?**" (Hebrews, 13:5-6)

... Let us draw near to God with a sincere heart **in full assurance of faith... Let us hold unswervingly to the hope we profess,** for He Who promised is faithful. (Hebrews, 10:22-23)

And **I am confident in the Lord** that I myself will come soon. (Philippians, 2:24)

But **I have had God's help to this very day,** and so I stand here and testify to small and great alike. I am saying nothing beyond what the prophets and Moses said would happen. (Acts, 26:22)

## To Pray

**Devote yourselves to prayer, being watchful and thankful.** (Colossians, 4:2)

**Is any one of you in trouble?** He should pray. Is anyone happy? Let him sing songs of praise. Is any one of you sick? He should call... to pray over him... **in the name of Lord. And the prayer offered in faith will make the sick person well; the Lord will raise him up.** If he has sinned, he will be forgiven. Therefore ... **pray for each other so that you may be healed. The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective.** (James, 5:13-16)

**God**, whom I serve with my whole heart... **is my witness how constantly I remember you in my prayers at all times; and I pray that now at last by God's will the way may be opened for me to come to you.** I long to see you so that I may impart to you some spiritual gift [to get stronger in the spiritual sense] to make you strong. (Romans, 1:9-11)

Be joyful in hope, patient in affliction, **faithful in prayer.** (Romans, 12:12)

**Pray continually;** give thanks in all circumstances, for this is God's will for you in Christ Jesus... (1 Thessalonians, 5:17-19)

**Brothers, pray for us.** (1 Thessalonians, 5:25)

**Devote yourselves to prayer, being watchful** and thankful. **And pray for us, too**, that God may open a door for our message, so that we may proclaim the mystery of Christ, for which I am in chains [for God's sake]. **Pray that I may proclaim it clearly, as I should.** (Colossians, 4: 2-4)

Do not be anxious about anything, **but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God.** And the peace of God, which transcends all understanding, will guard your hearts and your minds... (Philippians, 4:6-7)

**And this is my prayer: that your love may abound more and more in knowledge and depth of insight.** (Philippians, 1:9)

**Pray continually.** (1 Thessalonians, 5:17)

Watch, keep alert, and **pray**; for you don't know when the time is. (Mark, 13:33)

Jesus said to his disciples, "Sit here **while I pray.**" (Mark, 14:32)

**And pray... on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests.** With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints [who devote themselves to God]. (Ephesians, 6:18)

**And this is my prayer: that your love may abound more and more in knowledge and depth of insight**, so that you may be able to discern what is best and may be pure and blameless... filled with the fruit of righteousness that comes through Jesus Christ—to the glory and praise of God.



(Philippians, 1:9-11)

**Now we pray to God that you will not do anything wrong.** Not that people will see that we have stood the test but that you will do what is right even though we may seem to have failed. For we cannot do anything against the truth, but only for the truth. We are glad whenever we are weak but you are strong; **and our prayer is for your perfection.** (2 Corinthians, 13:7-9)

For this reason, ever since I heard about your faith in Jesus [as God's prophet] and your love for all the saints [those who devote themselves to God], I have not stopped giving thanks for you, **remembering you in my prayers. I keep asking that the God... the glorious... may give you the spirit of wisdom and revelation, so that you may know Him better. I pray also that the eyes of your heart may be enlightened** in order that you may know the hope to which He has called you, the riches of His glorious inheritance in the saints, and His incomparably great power for us who believe. That power is like... His mighty strength... (Ephesians, 1:15-20)

Stand firm then, with the belt of truth buckled around your waist, with the breastplate of righteousness in place, and with your feet fitted with the readiness that comes from the Gospel of peace. In addition to all this, take up the shield of faith, with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one... **And pray... on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests.** With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints [who devote themselves to God]. **Pray also for me, that whenever I open my mouth, words may be given me** so that I will [for God's good pleasure] fearlessly make known the mystery of the Gospel, for which I am an ambassador in chains. **Pray that I may declare it fearlessly, as I should.** (Ephesians, 6:14-20)

**Be... faithful in prayer.** (Romans, 12:12)

**One day Jesus was praying in a certain place. When he finished** [his prayer], one of his disciples said to him, "... **teach us to pray,** just as John taught his disciples." He said to them, "**When you pray, say:** "God, hallowed be Your name, Your kingdom come [the morality of the true religion become dominant over the world]. Give us each day our daily bread. Forgive us our sins, for we also forgive everyone who sins against us. And lead us not into temptation. (Luke, 11:1-4)

One of those days **Jesus went out to a mountainside to pray, and spent the night praying to God.** (Luke, 6:12)

**Night and day we pray most earnestly that we may see you again and supply what is lacking in your faith.** Now may our God... clear the way for us to come to you. May the Lord make your love increase and overflow for each other and for everyone else, just as ours does for you. May He strengthen your hearts so that you will be blameless and holy in the Presence of our God... (1 Thessalonians, 3:10-13)

With this in mind, **we constantly pray for you,** that our God may count you worthy of His calling, and that by His power He may fulfill every good purpose of yours and every act prompted by your

faith. (2 Thessalonians, 1:11)

Finally, brothers, **pray for us that the message of the Lord may spread rapidly and be honored, just as it was with you. And pray that we may be delivered from wicked and evil men**, for not everyone has faith. But the Lord is faithful, and He will strengthen and protect you from the evil one. We have confidence [for God's sake] in the Lord that you are doing and will continue to do the things we command. (2 Thessalonians, 3:1-4)

So I say to you: **Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives; he who seeks finds; and to him who knocks, the door will be opened.** (Luke, 11:9-10; Matthew 7:7-8)

**And when you pray, do not be like the hypocrites**, for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and on the street corners to be seen by men. I tell you the truth, they have received their reward in full. But **when you pray, go into your room, close the door and pray to your God, Who is unseen**. Then your God, Who sees what is done in secret, will reward you... **your God knows what you need before you ask Him**. "This, then, is how you should pray: "'Our God... hallowed be Your name, Your kingdom come, [the true religion reign over the world]... Give us today our daily bread. Forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one.'" (Matthew, 6:5-13)

Jesus went out as usual to the Mount of Olives, and his disciples followed him. On reaching the place, **he said to them, "Pray that you will not fall into temptation."** He withdrew about a stone's throw beyond them, **knelt down and prayed**, "God, if You are willing, take this cup from me; yet not my will, but Yours be done." An angel from heaven appeared to him [Jesus] and strengthened him... **he prayed more earnestly... When he rose from prayer and went back to the disciples**, he found them asleep..."Why are you sleeping?" he asked them. **"Get up and pray so that you will not fall into temptation."** (Luke, 22:39-46)

**If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, Who gives generously... and it will be given to him. But when he asks, he must believe and not doubt**, because he who doubts is like a wave of the sea, blown and tossed by the wind. That man should not think he will receive anything from the Lord; he is a double-minded man, unstable in all he does. (James, 1:5-8)

Jesus replied, "I tell you the truth, if you have faith and do not doubt, not only can you do what was done to the fig tree, but also you can say to this mountain, 'Go, throw yourself into the sea,' and it will be done. **If you believe, you will receive whatever you ask for in prayer.**" (Matthew, 21:21-22)

**In all my prayers for all of you, I always pray with joy** because of your partnership in the Gospel from the first day until now. (Philippians, 1:4-5)

... I always thank my God as **I remember you in my prayers**, because I hear about your faith in the Jesus and your love for all the saints [those who devote themselves to God]. **I pray that you may be**

**active in sharing your faith, so that you will have a full understanding of every good thing...** (Philemon, 1:4:6)

**They all joined together constantly in prayer,** along with the women and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brothers. (Acts, 1:14)

**Then they prayed,** "Lord, you know everyone's heart. Show us which of these two You have chosen to take over this apostolic ministry, which Judas left to go where he belongs." (Acts, 1:24-25)

With many other words he [Peter] warned them; and he pleaded with them, "Save yourselves from this corrupt generation." ... And about three thousand were added to their number that day. **They devoted themselves** to the apostles' teaching and to the fellowship, to the breaking of bread and **to prayer.** (Acts, 2:40-42)

One day Peter and John were going up to the temple **at the time of prayer**—at three in the afternoon. (Acts, 3:1)

Now, **Lord... enable your servants to speak Your word with great boldness... After they prayed,** the place where they were meeting was shaken. And they... spoke the word of God boldly. (Acts, 4:29-31)

Brothers, choose seven men from among you who are known to be full of the Spirit of God [with the morality with which God is pleased] and wisdom... We will turn this responsibility over to them **and will... give our attention to prayer and the ministry of the word.**" This proposal pleased the whole group... They... **prayed and laid their hands on them.** So the word of God spread. The number of disciples in Jerusalem increased rapidly, and a large number of priests became obedient to the faith. (Acts, 6:3-7)

When they arrived, **they prayed** for them that they might receive God's Spirit [the morality with which is pleased, their having faith]. (Acts, 8:15)

... [Jesus] told him, "Go to the house of Judas on Straight Street and ask for a man from Tarsus named Saul, **for he is praying.**" (Acts, 9:11)

**Peter sent them all out of the room; then he got down on his knees and prayed.** (Acts, 9:40)

At Caesarea there was a man named Cornelius, a centurion in what was known as the Italian Regiment. He and all his family were devout and God-fearing; he gave generously to those in need and **prayed to God regularly.** (Acts, 10:1-2)

About noon the following day as they were on their journey and approaching the city, **Peter went up on the roof to pray.** (Acts, 10:9)

Cornelius answered: "Four days ago I **was in my house praying** at this hour, at three in the afternoon. Suddenly a man in shining clothes stood before me and said, 'Cornelius, God has heard [answered] your prayer and remembered your gifts to the poor. (Acts, 10:30-31)

I was in the city of Joppa **praying**. (Acts, 11:5)

... So Peter was kept in prison, but **the church was earnestly praying to God for him**... (Acts, 12:5)

When this had dawned on him, he went to the house of Mary the mother of John, also called Mark, **where many people had gathered and were praying**. (Acts, 12:12)

**So after they had fasted and prayed**, they placed their hands on them and sent them off. (Acts, 13:3)

On the Sabbath we went outside the city gate to the river, where we expected to find a **place of prayer**. We sat down and began to speak to the women who had gathered there. (Acts, 16:13)

About midnight Paul and Silas **were praying and singing hymns to God**, and the other prisoners were listening to them. (Acts, 16:25)

When he [Paul] had said this, **he knelt down with all of them and prayed**. (Acts, 20:36)

But when our time was up, we left and continued on our way. All the disciples and their wives and children accompanied us out of the city, and there on the beach **we knelt to pray**. (Acts, 21:5)

When I returned to Jerusalem and **was praying at the temple**... (Acts, 22:17)

Fearing that we would be dashed against the rocks, they dropped four anchors from the stern and **prayed for daylight**... (Acts, 27:29)

... [Paul] went in to see him and, **after prayer**... (Acts, 28:8)

"We must go through many hardships to enter the kingdom of God [paradise]," they said Paul and Barnabas appointed elders for them in each church and, **with prayer and fasting, committed them to the Lord**, in Whom they had put their trust. (Acts, 14:23)

I urge you, brothers... **to join me in my struggle by praying to God for me. Pray** that I may be rescued from the unbelievers in Judea and that my service in Jerusalem may be acceptable to the saints there. (Romans, 15:30-31)

**Do not deprive each other [do not leave one another] except by mutual consent and for a time, so that you may devote yourselves to prayer**. Then come together again so that satan will not tempt you because of your lack of self-control. (1 Corinthians, 7:5)

So what shall I do? **I will pray with my spirit, but I will also pray with my mind**; I will sing with my spirit, but I will also sing with my mind. (1 Corinthians, 14:15)

He [God] has delivered us from such a deadly peril, and He will deliver us. On Him we have set our hope that He will continue to deliver us, **as you help us by your prayers**. Then many will give thanks on our behalf for the gracious favor granted us in answer to **the prayers of many**. (2

Corinthians, 1:10-11)

**And in their prayers for you** their hearts will go out to you, because of the surpassing grace God has given you. Thanks be to God for His indescribable gift! (2 Corinthians, 9:14-15)

I thank my God every time I remember you. **In all my prayers for all of you, I always pray with joy** because of your partnership in the Gospel from the first day until now. (Philippians, 1:3-5)

For I know that through **your prayers**... this will turn out for my deliverance. (Philippians, 1:19)

We always thank God... **when we pray for you**. (Colossians, 1:3)

For this reason, since the day we heard about you, **we have not stopped praying for you** and asking God to fill you with the knowledge of His will through all spiritual wisdom and understanding. **And we pray** this in order that you may live a life worthy of the Lord and may please Him in every way: bearing fruit in every good work, **growing in the knowledge of God**, being strengthened with all power according to His glorious might so that you may have great endurance and patience, and joyfully giving thanks to God, Who has qualified you to share in the inheritance of the saints [who devote themselves to God]... (Colossians, 1:9-12)

Epaphras, who is one of you and a servant of Christ Jesus, sends greetings. He is always struggling on your behalf **in his prayers**, that you may stand firm in all the will of God, mature and fully assured. (Colossians, 4:12)

We always thank God for all of you, **mentioning you in our prayers**. We continually remember before our God... your work produced by faith, your labor prompted by love, and your endurance inspired by hope in our Lord... (1 Thessalonians, 1:2-3)

I urge, then, first of all, that requests, **prayers**, intercession and thanksgiving **be made** for everyone—for kings and all those in authority, that we may live peaceful and quiet lives in all godliness and holiness. (1 Timothy, 2:1-23)

**I want men everywhere to lift up holy hands in prayer**, without anger or disputing. (1 Timothy, 2:8)

For everything God created is good, and nothing is to be rejected if it is received with thanksgiving, because **it is consecrated by the word of God and prayer**. (1 Timothy, 4:4-5)

The widow who is really in need and left all alone puts her hope in God and continues night and day to **pray** and to ask God for help. But the widow who lives for pleasure is dead even while she lives. (1 Timothy, 5:5-6)

I thank God, Whom I serve, as my forefathers did, with a clear conscience, **as night and day I constantly remember you in my prayers**. (2 Timothy, 1:3)

... **I always thank my God as I remember you in my prayers**, because I hear about your faith

in... Jesus [as God's prophet] and your love for all the saints [who devote themselves to God]. **I pray that** you may be active in sharing your faith, so that you will have a full understanding of every good thing... (Philemon, 1:4-6)

Prepare a guest room for me, because I hope to be restored **[be let to be with you by God] to you in answer to your prayers.** (Philemon, 1:22)

... **He offered up prayers and petitions with loud cries** and tears to the one Who could save him from death, and he was heard [their prayers were accepted] because of his reverent submission. (Hebrews, 5:7)

**Pray for us.** We are sure that we have a clear conscience and desire to live honorably in every way. **I particularly urge you to pray so that I may be restored to you soon.** (Hebrews, 13:18-19)

... **Pray for each other... The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective.** Elijah was a man just like us. **He prayed earnestly that it would not rain,** and it did not rain on the land for three and a half years. **Again he prayed, and the heavens gave rain, and the earth produced its crops.** (James, 5:16-18)

The end of all things is near. **Therefore be clear minded and self-controlled so that you can pray.** Above all, love each other deeply, because love covers over a multitude of sins. Offer hospitality to one another without grumbling. Each one should use whatever gift [spiritual beauty] he has received to serve others, faithfully administering God's grace in its various forms. (1 Peter, 4:7-10)

If anyone sees his brother commit a sin that does not lead to death, **he should pray to God.** (1 John, 5:16)

Dear friend, **I pray that you may enjoy good health and that all may go well with you,** even as your soul is getting along well. It gave me great joy to have some brothers come and tell about your faithfulness to the truth and how you continue to walk in the truth. (3 John, 1:2-4)

But you, dear friends, build yourselves up in your most holy faith and **pray...** Keep yourselves in God's love as you wait for the mercy... Be merciful to those who doubt; snatch others from the fire and save them; to others show mercy, mixed with fear—hating even the clothing stained by corrupted flesh. (Jude, 1:20-23)

This is the confidence we have in approaching God: **that if we ask anything according to His will, He hears us** [God answers our prayers]. And if we know that He hears us—whatever we ask—we know that we have what we asked of Him. (1 John, 5:14-15)

... sent them two by two ahead of him to every town and place where he was about to go. He told them, "The harvest is plentiful, but the workers are few. **Ask the Lord of the harvest,** therefore, to send out workers into his harvest field." (Luke, 10:1-2)

**Then Jesus told his disciples a parable to show them that they should always pray and not give up... And will not God bring about justice for His chosen ones, who cry out to him day and night?... I tell you, he will see that they get justice, and quickly. (Luke, 18:1-8)**

In the morning, as they went along, they saw the fig tree withered from the roots. Peter remembered and said to Jesus...The fig tree... has withered!" "Have faith in God," Jesus answered. "I tell you the truth, if anyone says to this mountain, 'Go, throw yourself into the sea,' and **does not doubt in his heart but believes that what he says will happen, it will be done for him. Therefore I tell you, whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours. And when you stand praying**, if you hold anything against anyone, forgive him... (Mark, 11:20-26)

Going a little farther, **he fell to the ground and prayed...** (Mark, 14:35)

"Simon, Simon, satan has asked [God] to sift you as wheat. But **I have prayed for you** [to God], Simon, that your faith may not fail. And when you have turned back, strengthen your brothers." (Luke, 22:31-32)

In that day you will no longer ask me anything. I tell you the truth... **God will give you whatever you ask... Ask and you will receive**, and your joy will be complete. (John, 16:23-24)

For there is no difference between Jew and Gentile—the same Lord is Lord of all and **richly blesses all who call on Him**, for, **"Everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved."** (Romans, 10:12-13)

**I pray that out of His glorious riches He may strengthen you with power... in your inner being...** And I pray that you, being rooted and established in love, may have power, together with all the saints [who devote themselves to God], to grasp how wide and long and high and deep is the love of Christ and to know this love that surpasses knowledge—that you may be filled to the measure of all the fullness of God. Now to Him Who is able to do immeasurably more than all we ask or imagine, according to His power that is at work within us. (Ephesians, 3:19-20)

**I pray also that the eyes of your heart may be enlightened** in order that you may know the hope to which He has called you [God's promise], the riches of His glorious inheritance [paradise] in the saints [who devote themselves to God], and His incomparably great power for us who believe. (Ephesians, 1:18-19)

## **To Heed One's Conscience**

**I thank God, Whom I serve, as my forefathers did, with a clear conscience**, as night and day I constantly remember you [by praying God for you] in my prayers. (2 Timothy, 1:3)

**... keeping a clear conscience.** (1 Peter, 3:16)

Timothy, my son, I give you this instruction... so that by following them you may fight the good fight

[to struggle with the moral perfection for the sake of goodness], **holding on to faith and a good conscience**. Some have rejected these and so have shipwrecked their faith. (1Timothy, 1:18-19)

... **Do not harden your hearts** as you did in the rebellion, during the time of testing in the desert. (Hebrews, 3:7-8)

... Paul... said, "**My brothers, I have fulfilled my duty to God in all good conscience to this day**." (Acts, 23:1)

[For God's sake] I speak the truth in Christ—I am not lying, **my conscience confirms**... (Romans, 9:1)

And I have the same hope in God as these men, that there will be a resurrection of both the righteous and the wicked. So I strive always to keep **my conscience clear before God**... (Acts, 24:15-16)

Now this is our boast: **Our conscience testifies that we have conducted ourselves in the world**, and especially in our relations with you, in the holiness and sincerity that are from God. (2 Corinthians, 1:12)

Therefore, since through God's mercy we have this ministry, we do not lose heart. Rather, we have renounced secret and shameful ways; we do not use deception, nor do we distort the word of God. On the contrary, **by setting forth the truth plainly we commend ourselves to every man's conscience in the Sight of God**. (2 Corinthians, 4:1-2)

... Deacons, likewise, are to be men worthy of respect, sincere, not indulging in much wine, and not pursuing dishonest gain. **They must keep hold of the deep truths of the faith with a clear conscience**. They must first be tested; and then if there is nothing against them, let them serve as deacons. (1 Timothy, 3:8-10)

... So we make it our goal to please Him... Since, then, we know what it is to fear the Lord, we try to persuade men. **What we are is plain to God, and I hope it is also plain to your conscience**. (2 Corinthians, 5:8-11)

**The goal of this command is love, which comes from a pure heart and a good conscience and a sincere faith**. Some have wandered away from these and turned to meaningless talk. They want to be teachers of the law, but they do not know what they are talking about or what they so confidently affirm. (1 Timothy, 1:5-7)

Let us draw near to God with a **sincere heart** in full assurance of faith, **having our hearts sprinkled to cleanse us from a guilty conscience** and having our bodies washed with pure water. Let us hold unswervingly to the hope we profess, for He Who promised is faithful. And let us consider how we may spur one another on toward love and good deeds. Let us not give up meeting together, as some are in the habit of doing, but let us encourage one another—and all the more as you see the Day approaching. (Hebrews, 10:22-25)



And do not forget to do good and to share with others, for with such sacrifices God is pleased. Obey your leaders and submit to their authority. They keep watch over you... Obey them so that their work will be a joy... for that would be of no advantage... Pray for us. **We are sure that we have a clear conscience and desire to live honorably in every way.** I particularly urge you to pray so that I may be restored to you soon. (Hebrews, 13:16-19)

... But do this with gentleness and respect **keeping a clear conscience**, so that those who speak maliciously against your good behavior... may be ashamed of their slander. It is better, if it is God's will, to suffer for doing good than for doing evil. (1 Peter, 3:15-17)

... Yet for us there is but one God... from whom all things came and for Whom we live; and... through Whom all things came and through Whom we live. But not everyone knows this. Some people are still so accustomed to idols that when they eat such food they think of it as having been sacrificed to an idol, and since their **conscience is weak, it is defiled.** (1 Corinthians, 8:5-7)

Dear friends, **if our hearts do not condemn us**, we have confidence before God and receive from Him anything we ask [our prayers are answered], because we obey His commands and do what pleases Him. (1 John, 3:21-22)

... In later times some will abandon the faith and follow deceiving spirits and things taught by demons... **whose consciences have been seared as with a hot iron.** They... order them to abstain from certain foods, which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and who know the truth. (1 Timothy, 4:1-3)

To the pure, all things are pure, but to those who are corrupted and do not believe, nothing is pure. In fact, **both their minds and consciences are corrupted.** They claim to know God, but by their actions they deny Him. They are detestable, disobedient and unfit for doing anything good. (Titus, 1:15-16)

Blessed are the meek, for they will inherit the earth. Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they will be filled. Blessed are the merciful, for they will be shown mercy. **Blessed are the pure in heart...** (Matthew, 5:5-8)

... If a man cleanses himself from the latter [inferior works], he will be an instrument for noble purposes, made holy... and prepared to do any good work. **Flee the evil desires of youth, and pursue righteousness, faith, love and peace, along with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart.** (2 Timothy, 2:21-22)

... **Their consciences also bearing witness**, and their thoughts now accusing, now even defending them. This will take place on the day when God will judge men's secrets... as my Gospel declares. (Romans, 2:14-16)

Submit yourselves, then, to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. Come near to God and He will come near to you. Wash your hands, you sinners, and **purify your hearts**, you double-minded.

(James, 4:7-8)

... As was said before: "Today, if you hear His voice [God's revelation], **do not harden your hearts.**" (Hebrews, 4:7)

... Pursue righteousness, faith, love and peace, along with those who call on the Lord **out of a pure heart.** (2 Timothy, 2:22)

Do not rebuke an older man harshly, but exhort him as if he were your father. Treat younger men as brothers, older women as mothers, and younger women as sisters, **with absolute purity.** Give proper recognition to those widows who are really in need. (1 Timothy, 5:1-3)

## To Believe in and Obey God's Messengers

[Jesus:] **He who is not with me is against me,** and he who does not gather with me scatters. (Matthew, 12:30)

Jesus answered, "The work of God is this: **to believe in the one He has sent.**" (John, 6:29)

**Then he said to them, "... whoever welcomes me welcomes the One [God] Who sent me."** (Luke, 9:48; Mark 9:37; Matthew 10:40)

[Jesus:] He who listens to you listens to me; he who rejects you rejects me; but **he who rejects me rejects Him [God] Who sent me.**" (Luke, 10:16)

Then they asked him, "What must we do to do the works God requires?" Jesus answered, "**The work of God** [what God requires] **is this: to believe in the one He has sent.**" (John, 6:28-29)

"I tell you the truth, **whoever hears my word and believes Him [God] Who sent me has eternal life and will not be condemned;** he has crossed over from death to life. (John, 5:24)

Why do you... not do what I say? **I will show you what he is like who comes to me and hears my words and puts them into practice. He is like a man building a house, who dug down deep and laid the foundation on rock. When a flood came, the torrent struck that house but could not shake it, because it was well built.** But the one who hears my words and does not put them into practice is like a man who built a house on the ground without a foundation. The moment the torrent struck that house, it collapsed and its destruction was complete." (Luke, 6:46-49)

But if anyone obeys **his [Jesus'] word, God's love is truly made complete in him.** This is how we know we are in Him [living by God's good pleasure]: Whoever claims to live in Him [living by His good pleasure] must walk as Jesus did. (1 John, 2:5-6)

**Obey your leaders [for God's good pleasure] and submit to their authority.** They keep watch over you... Obey them so that their work will be a joy... (Hebrews, 13:17)

[Jesus:] **"And everyone who has left houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or children or fields for me [for God's good pleasure] will receive a hundred times as much and will inherit eternal life [in paradise].** But many who are first will be last, and many who are last will be first." (Matthew, 19:29-30)

**Join with others in following my example, [believe in God and His Prophet Jesus like me] brothers,** and take note of those who live according to the pattern we gave you. (Philippians, 3:17)

**[Jesus:] "I have set you an example that you should do as I have done for you."** (John, 13:15)

**For the one whom God has sent speaks the words of God...** (John, 3:34)

[Jesus:] **I tell you the truth, if anyone keeps my word, he will never see death [the life in hell]** (John, 8:51)

When Jesus saw the crowd around him, he gave orders to cross to the other side of the lake. Then a teacher of the law came to him and said, **"Teacher, I will follow you wherever you go."** (Matthew, 8:18-19)

As Jesus went on from there, he saw a man named Matthew sitting at the tax collector's booth. **"Follow me," he told him, and Matthew got up and followed him.** (Matthew, 9:9)

The Jews were amazed and asked, "How did this man get such learning without having studied?" **Jesus answered, "My teaching is not my own. It comes from Him Who sent me. If anyone chooses to do God's will, he will find out whether my teaching comes from God or whether I speak on my own.** He who speaks on his own does so to gain honor for himself, but he who works for the honor of the One [God] Who sent him is a man of truth; there is nothing false about him. (John, 7:15-18)

**To the Jews who had believed him, Jesus said, "If you hold to my teaching, you are really my disciples. Then you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free."** (John, 8:31-32)

[Jesus:] "Don't believe me unless I carry out my God's work. But if I do it... **believe the works...**" (John, 10:37-38)

**Then Jesus cried out, "When a man believes in me, he does not believe in me only, but in the One [God] Who sent me...** I have come into the world as a light [for the guidance of the world], so that no one who believes in me should stay in darkness.

**"As for the person who hears my words but does not keep them, I do not judge him.** For I did not come to judge the world, but to save it. **There is a Judge [God] for the one who rejects me and does not accept my words...**" (John, 12:44-48)

As Jesus was walking beside the Sea of Galilee, he saw two brothers, Simon called Peter and his brother Andrew. They were casting a net into the lake, for they were fishermen. **"Come, follow me," Jesus said,** "and I will make you fishers of men." At once they left their nets and followed him. Going on from there, he saw two other brothers, James son of Zebedee and his brother John. They were in a boat with their father Zebedee, preparing their nets. Jesus called them, **and immediately they left the boat and their father and followed him.** (Matthew, 4:18-22)

As Jesus was getting into the boat, the man who had been demon-possessed begged to go with him. Jesus did not let him, but said, "Go home to your family and tell them how much the Lord has done for you, and how He has had mercy on you." **So the man went away and began to tell** in the Decapolis how much Jesus had done for him [by God's will]. And all the people were amazed. (Mark, 5:18-20)

He [Jesus] got into one of the boats, the one belonging to Simon, and asked him to put out a little from shore. Then he sat down and taught the people from the boat. When he had finished speaking, he said to Simon, "Put out into deep water, and let down the nets for a catch." Simon answered, **"Master, we've worked hard all night and haven't caught anything. But because you say so, I will let down the nets."** When they had done so, they caught such a large number of fish that their nets began to break. (Luke, 5:3-6)

Jesus replied, **"If anyone loves me, he will obey my teaching,** my God will love him...He who does not love me will not obey my teaching. These words you hear are not my own; they belong to God Who sent me. (John, 14:23-24)

[Jesus:] **"Whoever has my commands and obeys them,** he is the one who loves me. He who loves me will be loved by my God, and I too will love him ..." (John, 14:21)

[Jesus:] I tell you the truth... **whoever accepts me accepts the One Who [God] sent me.**" (John, 13:20)

Jesus entered Jericho and was passing through. A man was there by the name of Zacchaeus; he was a chief tax collector and was wealthy. He wanted to see who Jesus was, but being a short man he could not, because of the crowd. So he ran ahead and climbed a sycamore-fig tree to see him, since Jesus was coming that way. **When Jesus reached the spot, he looked up and said to him, "Zacchaeus, come down immediately. I must stay at your house today."** So he came down at once and welcomed him gladly. (Luke, 19:1-6)

... He testifies to what he has seen and heard, but no one accepts his testimony. The man who has accepted it has certified that God is truthful. **For the one whom God has sent speaks the words of God...** Whoever believes in Jesus has eternal life [paradise], but whoever rejects Jesus will not see life, for God's wrath remains on him." (John, 3:32-36)

... **for you do not believe the one He [God] sent.** You diligently study the Scriptures because you think that by them you possess eternal life. These are the Scriptures that testify about me, yet you refuse to come to me to have life. (John, 5:38-40)

Then [Jesus] will say to those on his right, 'Come, you who are blessed by my God; take your inheritance, the kingdom [paradise] prepared for you since the creation of the world. For I was hungry and you gave me something to eat, I was thirsty and you gave me something to drink, I was a stranger and you invited me in, I needed clothes and you clothed me, I was sick and you looked after me, I was in prison and you came to visit me.'... Then he will say to those on his left, 'you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared... For I was hungry and you gave me nothing to eat, I was thirsty and you gave me nothing to drink, I was a stranger and you did not invite me in, I needed clothes and you did not clothe me, I was sick and in prison and you did not look after me.' (Matthew, 25:34-36; 41-43)

## **Belief in and Obedience to God's Commandments in His Holy Books**

... **I believe everything that agrees with the Law [the revelation including God's commands] and that is written in the Prophets,** and I have the same hope in God as these men, that there will be a resurrection of both the righteous and the wicked. So I strive always to keep my conscience clear before God... (Acts, 24:14-16)

But he said to me, "Do not do it! **I am a fellow servant with you and with your brothers the prophets and of all who keep the words of this book.** Worship God!" (Revelation, 22:9)

After John was put in prison, **Jesus went into Galilee, proclaiming the good news of God [God's commandments].** "The time has come," he said. "The kingdom of God [the promise of paradise] is near. **Repent and believe the good news [God's commandments]!"** (Mark, 1:14-15)

That is why I am so eager to preach the Gospel also to you who are at Rome... **the Gospel, because it is the power of God for the salvation of everyone who believes...** For... a righteousness that is by faith from first to last, just as it is written: "The righteous will live by faith." (Romans, 1:15-17)

**[Jesus:] "Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law [God's previous commandment]**

**or the Prophets; I have not come to abolish them but to fulfill them...** Anyone who breaks one of the least of these commandments and teaches others to do the same will be called least in the kingdom of heaven [in the hereafter], **but whoever practices and teaches these commands will be called great in the kingdom of heaven [in the hereafter].**" (Matthew, 5:17-19)

Now, brothers, **I want to remind you of the Gospel I preached to you, which you received and on which you have taken your stand.** By this Gospel you are saved, if you hold firmly to the word I preached to you. (1 Corinthians, 15:1-2)

Both of them were upright in the Sight of God, **observing all the Lord's commandments and regulations blamelessly.** (Luke, 1:6)

**... He [God] will punish those who do not know God and do not obey the Gospel...** They will be punished with everlasting destruction and shut out from the Presence of the Lord and from the majesty of His power. (2 Thessalonians, 1:8-9)

**Moses describes in this way the righteousness that is by the law [revelation including God's commandments]: "The man who does these things will live by them [be rewarded in the hereafter with infinite paradise]." But the righteousness that is by faith says: "... The word is near you; it is in your mouth and in your heart. "** (Romans, 10:5-8)

If anybody thinks... spiritually gifted, let him acknowledge that what **I am writing to you is the Lord's command.** If he ignores this, he himself will be ignored. (1 Corinthians, 14:37-38)

[Jesus:] "Then he called the crowd to him along with his disciples and said: "If anyone would come after me, he must... follow me. For whoever wants to save his life will lose it, **but whoever loses his life [for God's good pleasure] for me and for the Gospel will save it.**" (Mark, 8:34-35)

Peter said to him, "We have left everything to follow you!" "I tell you the truth," Jesus replied, " [For God's good pleasure] **no one who has left home or brothers or sisters or mother or father or children or fields for me and the Gospel will fail to receive a hundred times as much in this present age [homes, brothers, sisters, mothers, children and fields—and with them, persecutions] and in the age to come, eternal life [paradise].**" (Mark, 10:28-30)

**But not all the Israelites accepted the good news [God's commandments].** For Isaiah says, "Lord, who has believed our message?" Consequently, faith comes from hearing the message, and the message is heard through the word of Christ. But I ask: Did they not hear? Of course they did: "Their voice has gone out into all the earth, their words to the ends of the world." (Romans, 10:16-18)

**Blessed is he who keeps the words of the prophecy in this book.** (Revelation, 22:7)

Blessed is the one who reads the words of this prophecy, and **blessed are those who hear it and take to heart what is written in it [God's Holy Book],** because the time is near. (Revelation, 1:3)

# NEARNESS TO GOD AND THE DEPTH OF FAITH ACCORDING TO THE GOSPEL

## The Joy and Rapture of Faith According to the Gospel

**Let us draw near to God with a sincere heart in full assurance of faith**, having our hearts sprinkled to cleanse us from a guilty conscience and having our bodies washed with pure water. (Hebrews, 10:22)

Hearing that Jesus had silenced the Sadducees, the Pharisees got together. One of them... tested him [Jesus] with this question: "Teacher, which is the greatest commandment in the Law [among God's commandments]?" Jesus replied: **"Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.' This is the first and greatest commandment."** (Matthew, 22:34-38)

**Submit yourselves, then, to God.** Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. **Come near to God and He will come near to you.** Wash your hands, you sinners, and purify your hearts, you double-minded. (James, 4:7-8)

And without faith it is impossible to please God, **because anyone who comes to Him must believe that He exists and that He rewards those who earnestly seek Him.** By faith Noah, when warned about things not yet seen, in holy fear built an ark to save his family. By his faith... became heir of the righteousness that comes by faith. (Hebrews, 11:6-7)

**For where two or three come together in My name, there am I with them.** (Matthew, 18:20)

"The God Who made the world and everything in it is the Lord of heaven and earth... He Himself gives all men life and breath and everything else. From one man He made every nation of men, that they should inhabit the whole earth; and He determined the times set for them and the exact places where they should live. **God did this so that men would seek Him and perhaps reach out for Him and find Him, though He is not far from each one of us.** 'For in Him we live [we live only to gain God's good pleasure] and move and have our being.' As some of your own poets have said, 'We are [by God's blessing] His offspring.'" (Acts, 17:24-28)

Dear friend, **you are faithful in what you are doing for the brothers, even though they are strangers to you.** They have told the church about your love. You will do well to send them on their way in a manner worthy of God [in the way which will please God]. It was for the sake of the Name

[for God's sake] that they went out, receiving no help from the pagans. (3 John, 1:5-7)

"... **Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord** [while seeking God's approval] **from now on.**"... "they will rest from their labor, for their deeds will follow them [because they will receive their rewards in the hereafter]." (Revelation, 14:13)

**Those who obey God's commands live in Him [lives in a way that complies with God's approval],** and He in them [God gives mercy to that person]... (1 John, 3:24)

For this very reason, **make every effort to add to your faith** goodness; and to goodness, knowledge; and to knowledge, self-control; and to self-control, perseverance; and to perseverance, godliness; and to **godliness**, brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness, love. (2 Peter, 1:5-7)

These have come so that **your faith... may be proved genuine** and may result in praise, glory and honor... (1 Peter, 1:7)

... Obey your earthly masters [obedience to God's commandments]... and do it, not only when their eye is on you and to win their favor, but **with sincerity of heart and reverence for the Lord.** Whatever you do, work at it **with all your heart, as working for the Lord, not for men**, since you know that you will receive an inheritance from the Lord as a reward... (Colossians, 3:22-24)

Now this is our boast: Our conscience testifies that **we have conducted ourselves in the world, and especially in our relations with you, in the holiness and sincerity that are from God.** (2 Corinthians, 1:12)

**For it is by believing in your heart that you are made right with God...** (Romans, 10:10)

The goal of this instruction is love that flows from a pure heart, from a clear conscience, and from **a sincere faith.** (1 Timothy, 1:5)

**They must hold firmly to the secret of the faith with clear consciences.** (1 Timothy, 3:9)

Be shepherds of God's flock that is among you [be guide to other believers you are responsible for], **watching over it**, not because you must but because you want to, and not greedily but eagerly, as **God desires.** Do not lord it over the people entrusted to you, but be examples to the flock. (1 Peter, 5:2-3)

Do not do this only while you're being watched in order to please them... **do the will of God with all your heart. Serve willingly, as if you were serving the Lord** and not merely people, because you know that everyone will receive a reward from the Lord for whatever good he has done, whether he is a slave or free. (Ephesians, 6:6-8)

**So that your faith would not be based on human wisdom but on God's power.** (1 Corinthians, 2:5)

But the ones on the good soil are the people who hear the word but also **hold on to it with good**



**and honest hearts**, producing a crop through endurance." (Luke, 8:15)

When he [Barnabas] arrived [to Antioch], he rejoiced to see what the grace of God had done, and with hearty determination **he kept encouraging all of them to remain faithful to the Lord**. For he was a good man, full of... faith. And so a large number of people was brought to the Lord. (Acts, 11:23-24)

## **Nearness and Devotion to and Genuine Faith in God According to the Gospel**

**Never be lacking in zeal, but keep your spiritual fervor**, serving the Lord. (Romans, 12:11)

Consider it pure joy, my brothers, **whenever you face trials of many kinds**, because you know that the testing of your faith develops perseverance. Perseverance must finish its work so that you may be mature and complete, not lacking anything. (James, 1:2-4)

**For in my inner being I delight in God's law** [God's commandments]. (Romans, 7:22)

Therefore, my dear brothers, stand firm. Let nothing move you. Always give yourselves fully to the work of the Lord, because you know that **your labor in the Lord [in the service you make on God's path] is not in vain**. (1 Corinthians, 15:58)

Who through faith are shielded by God's power until the coming of the salvation that is ready to be revealed in the last time. In this **you greatly rejoice, though now for a little while you may have had to suffer grief in all kinds of trials**. These have come so that your faith of greater worth than gold, which perishes even though refined by fire **may be proved genuine and may result in praise, glory and honor** when Jesus Christ is revealed. Though you have not seen him, you love him [for God's approval]; and even though you do not see him now, you believe in him [as a prophet of God] and **are filled with an inexpressible and glorious joy**, for you are receiving the goal of your faith, the salvation of your souls. (1 Peter, 1:5-9)

My message and my preaching were not with wise and persuasive words, but with a demonstration of His power [God's Revelation], so that **your faith might not rest on men's wisdom, but on God's power**. (1 Corinthians, 2:4-5)

Her neighbors and relatives heard that the Lord had shown her great mercy, and they **shared her joy**. (Luke, 1:58)

**And the disciples were filled with joy and with God's Spirit**. (Acts, 13:52)

**Rejoice in the Lord [your faith in God] always. I will say it again: Rejoice!** (Philippians, 4:4)

**I have been reminded of your sincere faith... I remind you to fan into flame [increase] the**

**gift of God...** (2 Timothy, 1:5-6)

Brothers, I do not consider myself yet to have taken hold of it. But one thing I do: Forgetting what is behind [what I did in the past] and straining toward what is ahead [what I will do in the future], **I press on toward the goal to win the prize for which God has called me** [in His promise]... (Philippians, 3:13-14)

Make sure that nobody pays back wrong for wrong, but always try to be kind to each other and to everyone else. **Be joyful always**; pray continually; give thanks in all circumstances, for this is God's will for you... (1 Thessalonians, 5:15-18)

Yet when I preach the Gospel, I cannot boast, for I am compelled to preach. Woe to me if I do not preach the Gospel! **If I preach voluntarily, I have a reward**; if not voluntarily, I am simply discharging the trust committed to me. What then is my reward? Just this: **that in preaching the Gospel I may offer it free of charge...** (1 Corinthians, 9:16-18)

For now we really live, since you are standing firm in the Lord... **all the joy we have in the Presence of our God...** (1 Thessalonians, 3:8-9)

"Blessed are you **when people insult you, persecute you and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of me. Rejoice and be glad**, because great is your reward in heaven [in the hereafter], for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who were before you." (Matthew, 5:11-12)

[Jesus:] "The kingdom of heaven [paradise] is like treasure hidden in a field. When a man found it, he hid it again, and then **in his joy went** and sold all he had and bought that field." (Matthew, 13:44)

**How blessed is this woman** for believing that what was spoken to her by the Lord would be fulfilled!" And Mary said: "My soul glorifies the Lord and **my spirit rejoices in God**, for He has been mindful of the humble state of His servant. **From now on all generations will call me blessed**, for the Mighty One [my Lord], has done great things [He has done me a great favor] for me holy is His name. (Luke, 1:45-49)

David said... : "I saw the Lord always before me [I always felt God's help]. Because He is at my right hand [because I am under God's mercy], I will not be shaken. **Therefore my heart is glad and my tongue rejoices; my body also will live in hope...** You have made known to me the paths of life; **you will fill me with joy in your presence.** (Acts, 2:25-28)

Every day they continued to meet together in the temple courts. They broke bread in their homes and **ate together with glad and sincere hearts, praising God** and enjoying the favor of all the people. And the Lord added to their number daily those who were being saved [the ones who were guided to the true path]. (Acts, 2:46-47)

For the kingdom of God [paradise], is not a matter of eating and drinking, but of righteousness,

**peace and joy in the God's Spirit**, because anyone who serves Christ [to earn God's good pleasure] in this way is pleasing to God and approved by men. (Romans, 14:17-18)

**May the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace as you trust in Him, so that you may overflow with hope...** (Romans, 15:13)

**I have told you this so that my joy may be in you and that your joy may be complete.** My command [for God's good pleasure] is this: Love each other as I have loved you... You are my friends [for God's sake] if you do what I command. (John, 15:11-14)

... "[By His mercy] God has shown kindness by giving you rain from heaven and crops in their seasons; He provides you with plenty of food and **fills your hearts with joy.**" (Acts, 14:16-17)

**It has given me great joy** to find some of your children **walking in the truth**, just as God commanded us. (2 John 1:4)

But you, man of God, flee from all this, and **pursue** righteousness, **godliness, faith**, love, endurance and gentleness. **Fight the good fight of the faith. Take hold of the eternal life [the promise of paradise]** to which you were called when you made your good confession in the presence of many witnesses. (1 Timothy, 6:11-12)

**They must keep hold of the deep truths of the faith with a clear conscience** (1 Timothy, 3:9)

So then, my brothers, **keep on rejoicing in the Lord...** (Philippians, 3:1)

And so, my dear friends... **continue to work out your salvation with fear and trembling.** (Philippians, 2:12)

For this very reason, you must **make every effort** to supplement your faith with moral character, your moral character with knowledge, your knowledge with self-control, your self-control with endurance, your endurance with godliness, your godliness with brotherly kindness, and your brotherly kindness with love. (2 Peter, 1:5-7)

... **If there is any compassion and sympathy**, then fill me with joy by having the same attitude, sharing the same love, being united in spirit, and keeping one purpose in mind. (Philippians, 2:1-2)

So then, **encourage one another** and build each other up, as you are doing. (1 Thessalonians, 5:11)

In the same way, **you also should rejoice and share your joy with me.** (Philippians, 2:18)

See what great earnestness godly sorrow [difficulties you face on God's path] has produced in you! **How ready you are to clear yourselves...** how alarmed, how full of longing and enthusiasm... (2 Corinthians, 7:11)

But **we want each of you to continue to be diligent to the very end**, in order to give full assurance to your hope. Then, instead of being lazy, you will imitate those who are inheriting the promises through faith and patience. (Hebrews, 6:11-12)

## Soundness and Depth of Faith According to the Gospel

If **you continue in your faith, established and firm**, not moved from the hope held out in the Gospel... (Colossians, 1:23)

My message and my preaching were not with wise and persuasive words, but with a demonstration of the [God's] Spirit's power, so that **your faith might not rest on men's wisdom, but on God's power**. (1 Corinthians, 2:4-5)

**Therefore since we have... Jesus... let us hold firmly to the faith we profess**. (Hebrews, 4:14)

**This is the victory that has overcome the world, even our faith**. (1 John, 5:4)

**Then he told them many things in parables**, saying: "A farmer went out to sow his seed. As he was scattering the seed, some fell along the path, and the birds came and ate it up. Some fell on rocky places, where it did not have much soil. It sprang up quickly, because the soil was shallow. But when the sun came up, the plants were scorched, and they withered because they had no root. Other seed fell among thorns, which grew up and choked the plants. **Still other seed fell on good soil, where it produced a crop—a hundred, sixty or thirty times what was sown**. He who has ears, let him hear... Listen then to what the parable of the sower means: When anyone hears the message about the kingdom [paradise] and does not understand it, the evil one comes and snatches away what was sown in his heart. This is the seed sown along the path. The one who received the seed that fell on rocky places is the man who hears the word and at once receives it with joy. But since he has no root, he lasts only a short time. When trouble or persecution comes because of the word [because of obeying God's commandments], he quickly falls away. The one who received the seed that fell among the thorns is the man who hears the word, but the worries of this life and the deceitfulness of wealth choke it, making it unfruitful. **But the one who received the seed that fell on good soil is the man who hears the word and understands it. He produces a crop, yielding a hundred, sixty or thirty times what was sown**." (Matthew, 13:3-9; 18-23)

... Not that we lord it over your faith, but we work with you for your joy, because **it is by faith you stand firm**. (2 Corinthians, 1:24)

If any of you lacks wisdom, **he should ask God**, who gives generously to all... **and it will be given to him. But when he asks, he must believe and not doubt**, because he who doubts is like a wave of the sea, blown and tossed by the wind. That man should not think he will receive anything from the Lord; he is a double-minded man, unstable in all he does. (James, 1:5-8)

... [Jesus:] "... **Only hold on to what you have [your faith] until I come**." (Revelation, 2:24-25)

Therefore, my dear brothers, **stand firm. Let nothing move you. Always give yourselves fully**

**to the work of the Lord, because you know that your labor in the Lord is not in vain.** (1 Corinthians 15:58)

But you, dear friends, **build yourselves up in your most holy faith and pray...** Keep yourselves in God's love... to bring you to eternal life. (Jude, 1:20-21)

Do not be afraid of what you are about to suffer. I tell you, the devil will put some of you in prison to test you, and you will suffer persecution for ten days. **Be faithful, even to the point of death, and I will give you the crown of life [paradise].** (Revelation, 2:10)

Be self-controlled and alert. Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour. **Resist him, standing firm in the faith, because you know that your brothers throughout the world are undergoing the same kind of sufferings.** And the God of all grace, Who called you to His eternal glory... after you have suffered a little while, will Himself restore you and make you strong, firm and steadfast. To Him be the power for ever and ever. Amen. (1 Peter, 5:8-11)

Who is going to harm you **if you are eager to do good?** But even if you should suffer for what is right, you are blessed. **"Do not fear what they fear; do not be frightened."** (1 Peter, 3:13-14)

Therefore, **prepare your minds for action; be self-controlled; set your hope fully on the grace to be given you [the hereafter].**... As obedient children, do not conform to the evil desires you had when you lived in ignorance. But just as He [God] Who called you is holy, so be holy in all you do; for it is written: "Be holy, because I [God] am holy." (1 Peter, 1:13-16)

**By faith** Noah, when warned [by God] about things not yet seen, in holy fear [of God] built an ark to save his family. By his faith he condemned the world and became heir of the righteousness that comes **by faith.** By faith Abraham, when called to go to a place he would later receive as his inheritance, obeyed and went, even though he did not know where he was going. **By faith** he made his home in the promised land like a stranger in a foreign country; he lived in tents, as did Isaac and Jacob, who were heirs with him of the same promise. For he was looking forward to the city with foundations, whose architect and builder is God. **By faith** Abraham, even though he was past age—and Sarah herself was barren—was enabled to become a father because he considered Him faithful who had made the promise. And so from this one man, and he as good as dead, came descendants as numerous as the stars in the sky and as countless as the sand on the seashore. All these people were still living by faith when they died. They did not receive the things promised; they only saw them and welcomed them from a distance. And they admitted that they were aliens and strangers on earth. (Hebrews, 11:7-13)

**Let us hold unswervingly to the hope we profess,** for He Who promised is faithful. (Hebrews, 10:23)

God... will not forget your work and the love you have shown Him as you have helped His people and

continue to help them. **We want each of you to show this same diligence to the very end, in order to make your hope sure. We do not want you to become lazy, but to imitate those who through faith and patience inherit what has been promised.** (Hebrews, 6:10-12)

If **you continue in your faith, established and firm, not moved from the hope held out in the Gospel.** This is the Gospel that you heard and that has been proclaimed to every creature under heaven, and of which I, Paul, have become a servant [who is responsible to spread God's revelation]. (Colossians, 1:23)

Flee the evil desires of youth, and **pursue righteousness, faith, love and peace, along with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart.** (2 Timothy, 2:22)

For physical training is of some value, but godliness has value for all things, holding promise for both the present life and the life to come. This is a trustworthy saying that deserves full acceptance. And for this we labor and strive, that **we have put our hope in the living God, Who is the Savior of all men, and especially of those who believe.** (1 Timothy, 4:8-10)

... Do not neglect your gift [the faith which is God's blessing]... **Be diligent in these matters; give yourself wholly to them, so that everyone may see your progress. Watch your life and doctrine closely.** Persevere in them, because if you do, you will save both yourself and your hearers. (1 Timothy, 4:14-16)

... Do not treat prophecies with contempt. **Test everything. Hold on to the good.** Avoid every kind of evil. May God Himself, the God of peace, sanctify you through and through... your whole spirit, soul and body be kept blameless at the coming of ... Jesus Christ. (1 Thessalonians, 5:20-23)

For in this hope we were saved. But **hope that is seen is no hope at all. Who hopes for what he already has? But if we hope for what we do not yet have, we wait for it patiently.** (Romans, 8:24-25)

**Therefore we do not lose heart. Though outwardly we are wasting away, yet inwardly we are being renewed day by day.** (2 Corinthians, 4:16)

**"If you can'?" said Jesus. "Everything is possible for him who believes."** (Mark, 9:23)

When the disciples heard this, they were greatly astonished and asked, "Who then can be saved?" Jesus looked at them and said, **"With man this is impossible, but with God all things are possible."** (Matthew, 19:25-26)

Those who heard this asked, "Who then can be saved?" Jesus replied, **"What is impossible with men is possible with God."** (Luke, 18:26-27)

Then the disciples came to Jesus in private and asked, "Why couldn't we drive it out?" He replied, "Because you have so little faith. I tell you the truth, **if you have faith** as small as a mustard seed, you can say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there' and it will move. **Nothing will be**

**impossible for you."** (Matthew, 17:19-21)

**"Have faith in God,"** Jesus answered. **"I tell you the truth, if anyone says to this mountain, 'Go, throw yourself into the sea,' and does not doubt in his heart but believes that what he says will happen, it will be done for him."** (Mark, 11:22-23)

Then Jesus said to the centurion, **"Go! It will be done just as you believed it would."** **And his servant was healed at that very hour.** (Matthew, 8:13)

And without faith it is impossible to please God, because **anyone who comes to Him must believe that He exists and that He rewards those who earnestly seek Him.** (Hebrews, 11:6)

I pray that He would give you, according to His glorious riches, **strength in your inner being...** Then, having been rooted and grounded in love, you will be able to understand, along with all the saints, what is wide, long, high, and deep- that is, you will know the love of the Messiah, which transcends knowledge, and will be filled with all the fullness of God [with perfected faith]. (Ephesians, 3:16-19)

... For this reason, sharply correct believers so that they continue to **have faith that is alive and well.** They shouldn't pay attention to... myths or commands given by people who are always rejecting the truth. (Titus, 1:13-14)

## **Profound Reflection According to the Gospel**

But **Mary treasured up all these things and pondered them in her heart.** (Luke, 2:19)

**Reflect on what I am saying,** for the Lord will give you insight into all this. (2 Timothy, 2:7)

Brothers, **think about your own calling...** (1 Corinthians, 1:26)

... And **the others should weigh carefully what is said.** (1 Corinthians, 14:29)

Brothers, stop thinking like children. In regard to evil be infants, but **in your thinking be adults.** (1 Corinthians, 14:20)

Finally, brothers, **whatever is true, whatever is noble, whatever is right, whatever is pure, whatever is lovely, whatever is admirable—if anything is excellent or praiseworthy—think about such things.** (Philippians, 4:8)

And let **us consider how we may spur one another on toward love and good deeds.** Let us not give up meeting together, as some are in the habit of doing, but let us encourage one another and all the more as you see the Day approaching. (Hebrews, 10:24-25)

... Set your hearts on things above [those things that are valuable in God's Sight]... **Set your minds on things above [in God's Sight], not on earthly things.** (Colossians, 3:1-2)

... **Do you still not see or understand?** Are your hearts hardened? (Mark, 8:17)

**Consider him [Jesus' exemplary faith]** who endured such opposition from sinful men, so that you will not grow weary and lose heart. (Hebrews, 12:3)

We all stumble in many ways. If anyone is never at fault in what he says, he is a perfect man, able to keep his whole body in check. When we put bits into the mouths of horses to make them obey us, we can turn the whole animal. Or take ships as an example. Although they are so large and are driven by strong winds, they are steered by a very small rudder wherever the pilot wants to go. Likewise the tongue is a small part of the body, but it makes great boasts. **Consider what a great forest is set on fire by a small spark.** The tongue also is a fire, a world of evil among the parts of the body. It corrupts the whole person, sets the whole course of his life on fire, and is itself set on fire by hell. (James, 3:2-7)

## **Passages Regarding God's Secret Knowledge According to the Gospel**

"**The Lord has done this for me,**" she said. (Luke, 1:25)

... **There is no authority except that which God has established. The authorities that exist have been established by God.** (Romans, 13:1)

**For where two or three come together in My name, there am I with them.** (Matthew, 18:20)

**God did this so that men would seek Him... and find Him, though He is not far from each one of us.** 'For in Him we live and move and have our being.' [God encompasses everything, everything happens with the permission of God]... 'We are His offspring.' (Acts, 17:27-28)

On arriving there, they gathered the church together and **reported all that God had done through them [God made them instruments]**, and how he had opened the door of faith to the Gentiles. (Acts, 14:27)

When they came to Jerusalem, they were welcomed by the church and the apostles and elders, to whom **they reported everything God had done through them [God made them instruments]**. (Acts, 15:4)

... And the secrets of his heart will be laid bare. So he will fall down and worship God, exclaiming, **"God is really among you!" [God encompasses everywhere, He witnesses everyone every moment]** (1 Corinthians, 14:25)

Jesus said, "... **I do nothing on my own but speak just what God has taught me.**" (John, 8:28)

For **I did not speak of my own accord**, but God Who sent me commanded me what to say and how



to say it. I know that His command leads to eternal life [paradise]. **So whatever I say is just what God has told me to say.**" (John, 12:49-50)

**The One Who sent me is with me;** He has not left me alone, for I always do what pleases Him." Even as He spoke, many put their faith in Him [God]. (John, 8:29-30)

And the Gospel must first be preached to all nations. Whenever you are arrested and brought to trial, **do not worry beforehand about what to say. Just say whatever is given you at the time, for it is not you speaking, but the Spirit of God.** (Mark, 13:10-11)

But when they arrest you, do not worry about what to say or how to say it. At that time you will be given what to say, for **it will not be you speaking, but the Spirit of God speaking through you.** (Matthew, 10:19-20)

**Now faith is being sure of what we hope for and certain of what we do not see.** This is what the ancients were commended for. By faith we understand that the universe was formed at God's command, **so that what is seen was not made out of what was visible.** (Hebrews, 11:1-3)

## **Passages Regarding the Temporary Nature of the Life of This World According to the Gospel**

**Do not work for food that spoils, but for food that endures to eternal life...**" (John, 6:27)

... **Live your lives as strangers here** in reverent fear. For you know that it was not with perishable things such as **silver or gold that you were redeemed from the empty way** of life handed down to you from your forefathers... (1 Peter, 1:17-18)

**What good is it for a man to gain the whole world, and yet lose or forfeit his very self?** (Luke, 9:25)

**What good is it for a man to gain the whole world, yet forfeit his soul? Or what can a man give in exchange for his soul?** (Mark, 8:36-37)

**What good will it be for a man if he gains the whole world, yet forfeits his soul? Or what can a man give in exchange for his soul?** (Matthew, 16:26)

... **He [the rich man] will pass away like a wild flower.** For the sun rises with scorching heat and withers the plant; **its blossom falls and its beauty is destroyed.** In the same way, the rich man will fade away even while he goes about his business. (James, 1:9-11)

... For **this world in its present form is passing away.** (1 Corinthians, 7:31)

**People were eating, drinking, marrying and being given in marriage** up to the day Noah entered the ark. **Then the flood came and destroyed them all.** It was the same in the days of Lot. **People were eating and drinking, buying and selling, planting and building.** But the day Lot

left Sodom, **fire and sulfur rained down from heaven and destroyed them all.** (Luke, 17:27-29)

**Command those who are rich** in this present world not to be arrogant **nor to put their hope in wealth**, which is so uncertain, but to put their hope in God, Who richly provides us with everything for our enjoyment. Command them to do good, to be rich in good deeds, and to be generous and willing to share. In this way they will lay up treasure for themselves as a firm foundation for the coming age, so that **they may take hold of the life that is truly life.** (1 Timothy, 6:17-19)

So we fix our eyes not on what is seen [wordly gain], but on what is unseen [rewards of the hereafter]. For **what is seen is temporary, but what is unseen is eternal** hereafter. (2 Corinthians, 4:18)

What I mean, brothers, is that the time is short. From now on... those who buy something, as if it were not theirs to keep... For **this world in its present form is passing away...** (1 Corinthians, 7:29-31)

"Whoever can be trusted with very little can also be trusted with much, and whoever is dishonest with very little will also be dishonest with much. So **if you have not been trustworthy in handling worldly wealth, who will trust you with true riches?** And if you have not been trustworthy with someone else's property, who will give you property of your own?" (Luke, 16:10-12)

We do, however, speak a message of wisdom among the mature, but not the wisdom of this age or of **the rulers of this age, who are coming to nothing.** (1 Corinthians, 2:6)

Now we know that **if the earthly tent we live in is destroyed, we have a building from God, an eternal house in heaven... For while we are in this tent, we groan and are burdened...** so that **what is mortal** may be swallowed up by life. Now it is God Who has made us for this very purpose... (2 Corinthians, 5:1-5)

... For the trumpet will sound, the dead will be raised imperishable, and we will be changed. For **the perishable** must clothe itself with the imperishable, and **the mortal** with immortality. When **the perishable** has been clothed with **the imperishable**, and **the mortal** with immortality, then the saying that is written will come true... (1 Corinthians, 15:52-54)

He also says, "In the beginning, O Lord, You laid the foundations of the earth, and the heavens are the (Your) work... **They will perish, but You remain; they will all wear out like a garment.** You will roll them up like a robe; **like a garment they will be changed.** But You remain the same, and your years will never end." (Hebrews, 1:10-12)

For, "**All men are like grass, and all their glory is like the flowers of the field; the grass withers and the flowers fall,** but the word of the Lord stands forever." And this is the word that was preached to you. (1 Peter, 1:24-25)

**The end of all things** is near... (1 Peter, 4:7)

**Do not love the world or anything in the world.** If anyone loves the world, the love of God is not in Him. For everything in the world—the cravings of sinful man, the lust of His eyes and the boasting of what he has and does—comes not from God but from the world. **The world and its desires pass away, but the man who does the will of God lives forever.** (1 John, 2:15-17)

**"Be careful, or your hearts will be weighed down with dissipation, drunkenness and the anxieties of life,** and that day will close on you unexpectedly like a trap. For it will come upon all those who live on the face of the whole earth. Be always on the watch, and pray..." (Luke, 21:34-36)

**Set your minds on things above [in the hereafter], not on earthly things.** (Colossians, 3:2)

Still others, like seed sown among thorns, hear the word; but **the worries of this life, the deceitfulness of wealth and the desires for other things come in and choke the word, making it unfruitful.** Others, like seed sown on good soil, hear the word, accept it, and produce a crop—thirty, sixty or even a hundred times what was sown (Mark, 4:18-20)

**Each one is tempted when, by his own evil desire,** he is dragged away and enticed. Then, after desire has conceived, it gives birth to sin; and sin, when it is full-grown, gives birth to death [wrath of hell]. Don't be deceived, my dear brothers. (James, 1:14-16)

**... In the same way, any of you who does not give up everything he has cannot be my disciple.** "Salt is good, but if it loses its saltiness, how can it be made salty again? It is fit neither for the soil nor for the manure pile; it is thrown out. "He who has ears to hear, let him hear." (Luke, 14:33-35)

What causes fights and quarrels among you? Don't they come from your desires that battle within you? You want something but don't get it. You kill and covet, but you cannot have what you want. You quarrel and fight. You do not have, because you do not ask God. When you ask, you do not receive, because you ask with wrong motives, that you may spend what you get on your pleasures. **You adulterous people, don't you know that friendship with the world is hatred toward God? Anyone who chooses to be a friend of the world becomes an enemy of God.** (James, 4:1-4)

**Now we see but a poor reflection as in a mirror; then we shall see face to face [in the hereafter]. Now I know in part; then I shall know fully, even as I am fully known.** (1 Corinthians, 13:12)

**"There was a rich man who... lived in luxury every day.** At his gate was laid a beggar named Lazarus, covered with sores and longing to eat what fell from the rich man's table... The time came when the beggar died and the angels carried him to Abraham's side. **The rich man also died and was buried. In hell, where he was in torment,** he looked up and saw Abraham far away, with Lazarus by his side... Abraham said, 'Son, remember that in your lifetime you received your good things, while Lazarus received bad things, but now he is comforted here and you are in agony.'" (Luke, 16:19-25)

**"Stop storing up treasures for yourselves on earth, where moths and rust destroy** and where thieves break in and steal. But keep on storing up treasures for yourselves in heaven [in the hereafter], where moths and rust do not destroy and where thieves do not break in and steal, because where your treasure is, there your heart will be also." (Matthew, 6:19-21)

Dear friends, I urge you **as aliens and exiles [in the world]** to keep on abstaining from the desires of the flesh that wage war against the soul. Continue to live such upright lives among the Gentiles... (1 Peter, 2:11-12)

Because we do not look for things that can be seen but for things that cannot be seen. For **things that can be seen are temporary, but things that cannot be seen are eternal.** (2 Corinthians, 4:18)

For **we have brought nothing into the world, so we cannot take anything out of it either.** If we have food and covering, with these we shall be content. But those who want to get rich fall into temptation and a snare and many foolish and harmful desires which plunge men into ruin and destruction. For the love of money is a root of all sorts of evil, and some by longing for it have wandered away from the faith and pierced themselves with many griefs. But flee from these things, you man of God, and pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, perseverance and gentleness. Fight the good fight of faith; take hold of the eternal life [paradise] to which you were called... (1 Timothy, 6:7-12)

"The land of a certain rich man produced good crops. So he began to think to himself, 'What should I do, since I have no place to store my crops?' Then he said, 'This is what I'll do. I'll tear down my barns and build bigger ones, and I'll store all my grain and goods in them. Then I'll say to myself, "You've stored up plenty of good things for many years. Take it easy, eat, drink, and enjoy yourself.'" But God said to him, '**You fool! This very night your life will be demanded back from you. Now who will get the things you've accumulated?**' That's how it is with the person who stores up treasures for himself rather than with God." (Luke, 12:16-21)

# COMMANDS AND PROHIBITIONS COMPATIBLE WITH THE QUR'AN IN THE GOSPEL

## Not to Murder

This is the message you heard from the beginning: We should love one another. **Do not be like Cain, who belonged to the evil one and murdered his brother. And why did he murder him? Because his own actions were evil and his brother's were righteous... and you know that no murderer has eternal life [paradise] in him.** (1 John, 3:11-15)

**You have heard that it was said to the people long ago, "Do not murder, and anyone who murders will be subject to judgment."** (Matthew, 5:21)

"Why do you call me good?" Jesus answered. "No one is good—except God alone. **You know the commandments: 'Do not murder,** do not commit adultery, do not steal, do not give false testimony, do not defraud, honor your father and mother.'" (Mark, 10:18-19, Luke 18:19-20)

The commandments, "Do not commit adultery," **"Do not murder,"** "Do not steal," "Do not covet," and whatever other commandment there may be, are summed up in this one rule: "Love your neighbor as yourself." (Romans, 13:9)

For whoever keeps the whole law and yet stumbles at just one point is guilty of breaking all of it. For he who said, "Do not commit adultery," also said, **"Do not murder."** **If you** do not commit adultery but **do commit murder, you have become a lawbreaker.** (James, 2:10-11)

... These make a man 'unclean.' For out of the heart come evil thoughts, **murder**, adultery, sexual immorality, theft, false testimony, slander. **These are what make a man 'unclean.'** (Matthew, 15:18-20)

He [Jesus] went on: "What comes out of a man is what makes him 'unclean.' For from within, out of men's hearts, come evil thoughts, sexual immorality, theft, murder, adultery, greed, malice, deceit, lewdness, envy, slander, arrogance and folly. **All these evils come from inside and make a man 'unclean.'** (Mark, 7:20-23)

**Nor did they repent of their murders,** their magic arts, their sexual immorality or their thefts. (Revelation, 9:21)

Furthermore, since they did not think it worthwhile to retain the knowledge of God [God is beyond that], He gave them over to a depraved mind. They have become filled with every kind of wickedness, evil, greed and depravity. **They are full of** envy, **murder**, strife, deceit and malice. They are gossips, slanderers, hateful to God [God is beyond that], insolent, arrogant and boastful; they invent ways of doing evil; they disobey their parents; they are senseless, faithless, heartless,

ruthless. **Although they know God's righteous decree that those who do such things deserve death [hell], they not only continue to do these very things but also approve of those who practice them.** (Romans, 1:28-32)

What causes fights and quarrels among you? Don't they come from your desires that battle within you? **You want something but don't get it. You kill** and covet, but you cannot have what you want. You quarrel and fight. You do not have, because you do not ask God. When you ask, you do not receive, because you ask with wrong motives, that you may spend what you get on your pleasures. You adulterous people, don't you know that friendship with the world is hatred toward God? Anyone who chooses to be a friend of the world becomes an enemy of God [God is beyond that]. (James, 4:1-4)

## Not to Steal

**He who has been stealing must steal no longer**, but must work, doing something useful with his own hands, that he may have something to share with those in need. (Ephesians, 4:28)

[Jesus:] "You know the commandments: 'Do not commit adultery, do not murder, **do not steal**, do not give false testimony, honor your father and mother.'" "All these I have kept since I was a boy," he said. (Luke, 18:20-21; Matthew 19:17-19)

"Why do you ask me about what is good?" Jesus replied. "There is only One who is good. If you want to enter life, obey the commandments." "Which ones?" the man inquired. Jesus replied, " 'Do not murder, do not commit adultery, **do not steal**, do not give false testimony, honor your father and mother,' and 'love your neighbor as yourself.'" "All these I have kept," the young man said. (Matthew, 19:17-19)

The commandments, "Do not commit adultery," "Do not murder," "**Do not steal**," "Do not covet," and whatever other commandment there may be, are summed up in this one rule: "Love your neighbor as yourself." (Romans, 13:9-10)

**If you suffer, it should not be as a murderer or thief** or any other kind of criminal, or even as a meddler. However, if you suffer as a Christian, do not be ashamed, but praise God that you bear that name. (1 Peter, 4:15-16)

If you are convinced that you are a guide for the blind, a light for those who are in the dark, an instructor of the foolish, a teacher of infants, because you have in the law the embodiment of knowledge and truth you, then, who teach others, do you not teach yourself? **You who preach against stealing, do you steal?** (Romans, 2:19-21)

Nor did they repent of their murders, their magic arts, their sexual immorality or **their thefts**. (Revelation, 9:21)

[Jesus:] "You know the commandments: 'Do not murder, do not commit adultery, **do not steal**, do not give false testimony, do not defraud, honor your father and mother.'" (Mark, 10:19)

## **Not to Engage in Prostitution and Adultery**

**Marriage should be honored by all... and... kept pure, for God will judge the adulterer and all the sexually immoral.** (Hebrews, 13:4)

You know the commandments: 'Do not murder, **do not commit adultery**, do not steal, do not give false testimony, do not defraud, honor your father and mother.' (Mark, 10:19)

You have heard that it was said, '**Do not commit adultery.**' (Matthew, 5:27)

**It is God's will that you should be sanctified, that you should avoid sexual immorality.** (1 Thessalonians, 4:3)

**Lest there [be] any fornicator, or profane person.** (Hebrews, 12:16)

**In a similar way, Sodom and Gomorrah and the surrounding towns gave themselves up to sexual immorality and perversion. They serve as an example of those who suffer the punishment of eternal fire.** (Jude, 1:7)

**But among you there must not be even a hint of sexual immorality, or of any kind of impurity, or of greed, because these are improper for God's holy people [who devote themselves to God].** Nor should there be obscenity, foolish talk or coarse joking, which are out of place, but rather thanksgiving. **For of this you can be sure: No immoral, impure or greedy person—such a man is an idolater—has any inheritance in the kingdom... of God [paradise].** Let no one deceive you with empty words, for because of such things God's wrath comes on those who are disobedient. Therefore do not be partners with them. (Ephesians, 5:3-7)

"What comes out of a man is what makes him 'unclean.' For from within, out of men's hearts, come evil thoughts, **sexual immorality**, theft, murder, **adultery**, greed, malice, deceit, lewdness, envy, slander, arrogance and folly. **All these evils come from inside and make a man 'unclean.'**" (Mark, 7:20-22)

Everything is permissible for me"—but not everything is beneficial. "Everything is permissible for me"—but I will not be mastered by anything. "Food for the stomach and the stomach for food"—but God will destroy them both. **The body is not meant for sexual immorality, but for the Lord [for obeying God's commandments and prohibitions]...** (1 Corinthians, 6:12-13)

**Flee from sexual immorality...** (1 Corinthians, 6:18)

Instead we should write to them, telling them **to abstain from** food polluted by idols, from **sexual immorality**, from the meat of strangled animals and from blood. For Moses has been preached in

every city from the earliest times and is read in the synagogues on every Sabbath. (Acts, 15:20-21)

It seemed good... to us not to burden you with anything beyond the following requirements: **You are to abstain** from food sacrificed to idols, from blood, from the meat of strangled animals and **from sexual immorality**. You will do well to avoid these things. Farewell. (Acts, 15:28-29)

As for the Gentile believers, **we have written to them our decision that they should abstain** from food sacrificed to idols, from blood, from the meat of strangled animals and **from sexual immorality**. (Acts, 21:25)

For out of the heart come evil thoughts, murder, adultery, **sexual immorality**, theft, false testimony, slander. **These are what make a man 'unclean'...** (Matthew, 15:19-20)

[Jesus:] "Why do you ask me about what is good?" Jesus replied. "There is only One Who is good. If you want to enter life, obey the commandments [of God]." "Which ones?" the man inquired. Jesus replied, "'Do not murder, **do not commit adultery**, do not steal, do not give false testimony, honor your father and mother,' and 'love your neighbor as yourself.'" (Matthew, 19:17-19)

The commandments, "**Do not commit adultery**," "Do not murder," "Do not steal," "Do not covet," and whatever other commandment there may be, are summed up in this one rule: "Love your neighbor as yourself." (Romans, 13:9)

He who overcomes will inherit all this... But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vile, the murderers, **the sexually immoral**, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters and all liars—**their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur [hell]**. This is the second death. (Revelation, 21:7-8)

**Outside [outside paradise] are... those who practice** magic arts, **the sexually immoral**, the murderers, the idolaters and everyone who loves and practices falsehood. (Revelation, 22:15)

Do you not know that **the wicked will not inherit the kingdom of God [paradise]**? Do not be deceived: Neither the sexually immoral nor idolaters nor **adulterers** ...nor thieves nor the greedy nor drunkards nor slanderers nor swindlers will inherit the kingdom of God. (1 Corinthians, 6:9-10)

For whoever keeps the whole law and yet stumbles at just one point is guilty of breaking all of it. For He Who said, "**Do not commit adultery**," also said, "Do not murder."... (James, 2:10-11)

**It is actually reported that there is sexual immorality among you, and of a kind that does not occur even among pagans:** A man has his father's wife. Shouldn't ...you have put out of your fellowship the man who did this?... I have written you in my letter... that **you must not associate with anyone who calls himself a brother but is sexually immoral or greedy, an idolater or a slanderer, a drunkard or a swindler. With such a man do not even eat.** (1 Corinthians, 5:1-11)

**Put to death**, therefore, whatever belongs to your earthly nature: **sexual immorality**, impurity, lust, evil desires and greed, which is idolatry. (Colossians, 3:5)

The acts of the sinful nature [the lower-self] are obvious: **sexual immorality**, impurity and



debauchery; idolatry and witchcraft; hatred, discord, jealousy, fits of rage, selfish ambition, dissensions, factions and envy; drunkenness, orgies, and the like. I warn you, as I did before, that **those who live like this will not inherit the kingdom of God [paradise]**. (Galatians, 5:19-21)

**Nor did they repent of** their murders, their magic arts, **their sexual immorality or their thefts**. (Revelation, 9:21)

... By her teaching **she misleads my servants into sexual immorality** and the eating of food sacrificed to idols. **I have given her time to repent of her immorality, but she is unwilling**. So I will cast her on a bed of suffering, and **I will make those who commit adultery with her suffer intensely, unless they repent of her ways...** I will repay each of you according to your deeds. (Revelation, 2:20-23)

He went on: "What comes out of a man is what makes him 'unclean.' For from within, out of men's hearts, come evil thoughts, **sexual immorality**, theft, murder, **adultery**, greed, malice, deceit, lewdness, envy, slander, arrogance and folly. **All these evils come from inside and make a man 'unclean.'** (Mark, 7:20-23)

But these men blaspheme in matters they do not understand. They are like brute beasts, creatures of instinct, born only to be caught and destroyed, and like beasts they too will perish. They will be paid back with harm for the harm they have done. Their idea of pleasure is to carouse in broad daylight. They are blots and blemishes, reveling in their pleasures while they feast with you. **With eyes full of adultery, they never stop sinning;** they seduce the unstable; they are experts in greed—an accursed brood! (2 Peter, 2:12-14)

## Homosexuality and Perversion is Forbidden

... God gave them over in the sinful desires of their hearts to sexual impurity for the degrading of their bodies with one another. They exchanged the truth of God for a lie... Because of this, God gave them over to shameful lusts. **Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones. In the same way the men also abandoned natural relations with women and were inflamed with lust for one another. Men committed indecent acts with other men, and received in themselves the due penalty for their perversion.** Furthermore, since they did not think it worthwhile to retain the knowledge of God [God is beyond that], He gave them over to a depraved mind, to do what ought not to be done. (Romans, 1:24-28)

**Do you not know that the wicked will not inherit the kingdom of God [paradise]?** Do not be deceived: Neither the sexually immoral nor idolaters nor adulterers nor male prostitutes **nor homosexual offenders** nor thieves nor the greedy nor drunkards nor slanderers nor swindlers will inherit the kingdom of God [paradise]? (1 Corinthians, 6:9-10)

If He [God] condemned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah by burning them to ashes, and made them

an example of what is going to happen to the ungodly; and if He rescued Lot, **a righteous man, who was distressed by the filthy lives of lawless men (for that righteous man, living among them day after day, was tormented in his righteous soul by the lawless deeds he saw and heard)** if this is so, then the Lord knows how to rescue godly men from trials and **to hold the unrighteous for the day of judgment, while continuing their punishment. This is especially true of those who follow the corrupt desire of the sinful nature and despise authority.** (2 Peter, 2:6-10)

For certain men whose condemnation was written... have secretly slipped in among you... Though you already know all this, I want to remind you that the Lord delivered His people out of Egypt, but later destroyed those who did not believe... **In a similar way, Sodom and Gomorrah and the surrounding towns gave themselves up to sexual immorality and perversion. They serve as an example of those who suffer the punishment of eternal fire.** In the very same way, these dreamers pollute their own bodies, reject authority and slander celestial beings... and **what things they do understand by instinct, like unreasoning animals—these are the very things that destroy them.** (Jude, 1:4-10)

We also know that **law is made not for the righteous but for lawbreakers** and rebels, the ungodly and sinful, the unholy and irreligious; for those who kill their fathers or mothers, for murderers, for adulterers and **perverts**, for slave traders and liars and perjurers—and for whatever else is contrary to the sound doctrine. (1 Timothy, 1:9-10)

## Not to Tell Lies

**Do not lie to each other...** (Colossians, 3:9)

Again, you have heard that it was said to the people long ago, '**Do not break your oath**, but keep the oaths you have made to the Lord.' (Matthew, 5:33)

**You know the commandments [of God]:** 'Do not murder, do not commit adultery, **do not steal, do not give false testimony**, do not defraud, honor your father and mother.' (Mark, 10:19)

Why do you ask me about what is good?" Jesus replied. "There is only One Who is good. If you want to enter life, obey the commandments." "Which ones?" the man inquired. Jesus replied, "'Do not murder, do not commit adultery, do not steal, **do not give false testimony**, honor your father and mother,' and 'love your neighbor as yourself'." (Matthew, 19:17-19; Mark 10:18-19; Luke 18:18-20)

**Do not lie to each other**, since you have taken off your old self [the way you were created] with its practices and have put on the new self, which is being renewed in knowledge in the image of its

Creator. (Colossians, 3:9-10)

[Jesus] For out of the heart come evil thoughts, murder, adultery, sexual immorality, theft, **false testimony, slander. These are what make a man 'unclean'...** (Matthew, 15:19-20)

He [Jesus] went on:... For from within, out of men's hearts, come evil thoughts... **slander... All these evils come from inside and make a man 'unclean.'** (Mark, 7:20-23)

But now **you must rid yourselves of all such things as these:** anger, rage, malice, slander, and **filthy language from your lips.** (Colossians, 3:8)

Timothy, guard what has been entrusted to your care. **Turn away from** aimless chatter and **the opposing ideas of what is falsely called knowledge,** which some have professed and in so doing have wandered from the faith. (1 Timothy, 6:20-21)

Now a man named Ananias, together with his wife Sapphira, also sold a piece of property. With his wife's full knowledge he kept back part of the money for himself, but brought the rest and put it at the apostles' feet. Then Peter said, "Ananias, how is it that satan has so filled your heart that you have lied... and **have kept for yourself some of the money you received for the land?** Didn't it belong to you before it was sold? And after it was sold, wasn't the money at your disposal? **What made you think of doing such a thing? You have not lied to men but to God.**" When Ananias heard this, he fell down and died. And great fear seized all who heard what had happened... (Acts, 5:1-6)

## Not to Cheat

Therefore, **rid yourselves of all malice and all deceit, hypocrisy,** envy, and slander of every kind. **Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may grow up in your salvation,** now that you have tasted that the Lord is good [you have seen God's mercy]. (1 Peter, 2:1-3)

Therefore, since through God's mercy we have this ministry, we do not lose heart. **Rather, we have renounced secret and shameful ways; we do not use deception, nor do we distort the word of God.** On the contrary, by setting forth the truth plainly we commend ourselves to every man's conscience in the Sight of God. (2 Corinthians, 4:1-2)

Outside [outside paradise] are the dogs, those **who practice** magic arts, the sexually immoral, the murderers, **the idolaters and everyone who loves and practices falsehood.** (Revelations 22:15)

He [Jesus] went on: "What comes out of a man is what makes him 'unclean.' For from within, out of men's hearts, come evil thoughts, sexual immorality, theft, murder,

adultery, greed, malice, **deceit**, lewdness, envy, slander, arrogance and folly. **All these evils come from inside and make a man 'unclean.'** (Mark, 7:20-23)

Furthermore, since they did not think it worthwhile to retain the knowledge of God, He gave them over to a depraved mind, to do what ought not to be done. They have become filled with every kind of wickedness, evil, greed and depravity. **They are full of** envy, murder, strife, **deceit** and malice. They are gossips, slanderers, hateful to God, insolent, arrogant and boastful; they invent ways of doing evil; they disobey their parents; they are senseless, faithless, heartless, ruthless. Although they know God's righteous decree that those who do such things deserve death [hell], they not only continue to do these very things but also approve of those who practice them. (Romans, 1:28-32)

Finally, be strong in the Lord [in complying with God's consent], and in His mighty power. **Put on the full [spiritual] armor of God so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes.** For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but... against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil... Therefore put on the full [spiritual] armor of God, so that when the day of evil comes, you may be able to stand your ground, and after you have done everything, to stand. (Ephesians, 6:10-13)

Nazareth! Can anything good come from there?" Nathanael asked. "Come and see," said Philip. When Jesus saw Nathanael approaching, he said of him, "**Here is a true Israelite, in whom there is nothing false.**" (John, 1:46-47)

Then Saul, who was also called Paul, filled with God's Spirit [faith in God], looked straight at Elymas and said, "**You are** a child of the devil and **an enemy of everything that is right! You are full of all kinds of deceit and trickery.** Will you never stop perverting the right ways of the Lord? Now the hand of the Lord is against you [you will be repaid with God's wrath]. You are going to be blind, and for a time you will be unable to see the light of the sun. (Acts, 13:9-11)

... **They are... reveling in their pleasures while they feast with you.** With eyes full of adultery, they never stop sinning; they seduce the unstable; they are experts in greed—an accursed brood! They have left the straight way and wandered off to follow the way of Balaam son of Beor, who loved the wages of wickedness. (2 Peter, 2:13-15)

## **To Avoid Magic and the Like**

**Nor did they repent of** their murders, their **magic arts**, their sexual immorality or their thefts. (Revelations 9:21)

He who overcomes will inherit all this... But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vile, the murderers, the sexually immoral, **those who practice magic arts**, the idolaters and all liars—**their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur [hell].** This is the second death. (Revelations 21:7-8)

**Outside [outside paradise] are the dogs, those who practice magic arts,** the sexually immoral, the murderers, the idolaters and everyone who loves and practices falsehood. (Revelations 22:15)

... There they met a Jewish sorcerer and false prophet named Bar-Jesus, who was an attendant of the proconsul, Sergius Paulus. The proconsul, an intelligent man, sent for Barnabas and Saul because he wanted to hear the word of God. But **Elymas the sorcerer (for that is what his name means) opposed them and tried to turn the proconsul from the faith.** Then Saul, who was also called Paul, filled with God's Spirit [faith in God], looked straight at Elymas and said, "You are a child of the devil and an enemy of everything that is right! You are full of all kinds of deceit and trickery. Will you never stop perverting the right ways of the Lord? (Acts, 13:6-10)

## **Consumption of Blood is Prohibited**

Instead **we should write to them, telling them to abstain from** food polluted by idols, from sexual immorality, from the meat of strangled animals and from **blood**. For Moses has been preached in every city from the earliest times and is read in the synagogues on every Sabbath. (Acts, 15:20-21)

It seemed good... to us not to burden you with anything beyond the following requirements: **You are to abstain** from food sacrificed to idols, **from blood**, from the meat of strangled animals and from sexual immorality. You will do well to avoid these things. Farewell. (Acts, 15:28-29)

As for the Gentile believers, **we have written to them our decision that they should abstain** from food sacrificed to idols, from blood, from the meat of strangled animals and from sexual immorality. (Acts, 21:25)

## **Meat from Animals That Have Been Killed by Strangulation is Forbidden**

Instead **we should write to them, telling them to abstain from** food polluted by idols, from sexual immorality, **from the meat of strangled animals** and from blood. For Moses has been preached in every city from the earliest times and is read in the synagogues on every Sabbath. (Acts, 15:20-21)

It seemed good... to us not to burden you with anything beyond the following requirements: **You are to abstain** from food sacrificed to idols, from blood, **from the meat of strangled animals** and from sexual immorality. You will do well to **avoid** these things. Farewell. (Acts, 15:28-29)

As for the Gentile believers, **we have written to them our decision that they should abstain** from food sacrificed to idols, from blood, **from the meat of strangled animals** and from sexual

immorality. (Acts, 21:25)

## **Not to Eat Meat Slaughtered in the Name of Anything Other Than God**

It seemed good... to us not to burden you with anything beyond the following requirements: **You are to abstain from food sacrificed to idols**, from blood, from the meat of strangled animals and from sexual immorality. You will do well to avoid these things. Farewell. (Acts, 15:28-29)

Instead **we should write to them, telling them to abstain from food polluted by idols**, from sexual immorality, from the meat of strangled animals and from blood. For Moses has been preached in every city from the earliest times and is read in the synagogues on every Sabbath. (Acts, 15:20-21)

As for the Gentile believers, **we have written to them our decision that they should abstain from food sacrificed to idols**, from blood, from the meat of strangled animals and from sexual immorality. (Acts, 21:25)

Now about food sacrificed to idols: We know that we all possess knowledge. Knowledge puffs up, but love builds up. The man who thinks he knows something does not yet know as he ought to know. But the man who loves God is known by God. So then, **about eating food sacrificed to idols: We know that an idol is nothing at all in the world and that there is no god but One...** [Yet] for us there is but one God... from Whom all things came and for Whom we live...But not everyone knows this. **Some people are still so accustomed to idols that when they eat such food they think of it as having been sacrificed to an idol, and since their conscience is weak, it is defiled.** (1 Corinthians, 8:1-7)

Nevertheless, **I have a few things against you:** You have people there who hold to the teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to entice the Israelites to sin by **eating food sacrificed to idols** and by committing sexual immorality. (Revelations 2:14)

## **Not to Drink Wine**

Therefore do not be foolish, but understand what the Lord's will is. **Do not get drunk on wine, which leads to debauchery.** Instead, be filled with the Spirit of God [faith in God]. Speak to one another with psalms, hymns and spiritual songs. Sing and make music in your heart to the Lord, always giving thanks to God... for everything... Submit to one another out of reverence for Christ. (Ephesians, 5:17-21)

For John... **came neither eating bread nor drinking wine...** (Luke, 7:33)

But the angel said to him: "Do not be afraid, Zechariah; your prayer has been heard. Your wife Elizabeth will bear you a son, and you are to give him the name John. He will be a joy and delight to you, and many will rejoice because of his birth, for he will be great in the Sight of the Lord. **He is never to take wine or other fermented drink**, and he will be filled with God's Spirit [faith in God] even from birth. Many of the people of Israel will he bring back to the Lord their God. And he will go on before the Lord... to turn the hearts of the fathers to their children and the disobedient to the wisdom of the righteous. (Luke, 1:13-17)

He must also have a good reputation with outsiders, so that he will not fall into disgrace and into the devil's trap. **Deacons, likewise, are to be men worthy of respect, sincere, not indulging in... wine, and not pursuing dishonest gain.** They must keep hold of the deep truths of the faith with a clear conscience. (1 Timothy, 3:7-9)

But suppose that servant is wicked and... begins to beat his fellow servants and **to eat and drink with drunkards... [God's wrath] will come on a day when he does not expect him and at an hour he is not aware of. He will cut him to pieces and assign him a place with the hypocrites**, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. (Matthew, 24:48-51; Luke 12:43-47)

Here is a trustworthy saying: If anyone sets his heart on being an overseer, he desires a noble task. Now the overseer must be above reproach... temperate, self-controlled, respectable, hospitable, able to teach, **not given to drunkenness, not violent** but gentle, not quarrelsome, not a lover of money. (1 Timothy, 3:1-3)

An elder must be blameless... a man whose children believe and are not open to the charge of being wild and disobedient. Since an overseer is entrusted with God's work, **he must be** blameless—not overbearing, not quick-tempered, **not given to drunkenness**, not violent, not pursuing dishonest gain. Rather he must be hospitable, one who loves what is good, who is self-controlled, upright, holy and disciplined. (Titus, 1:6-8)

You must teach what is in accord with sound doctrine. Teach the older men to be temperate, worthy of respect, self-controlled, and sound in faith, in love and in endurance. Likewise, teach the older women to be reverent in the way they live, not to be slanderers or **addicted to wine**, but to teach what is good. (Titus, 2:1-3)

# OTHER PROVISIONS OF THE GOSPEL THAT ARE COMPLIANT WITH THE QUR'AN

## Commanding What is Right and Forbidding What is Wrong

So watch yourselves. **"If your brother sins, rebuke him, and if he repents, forgive him.** If he sins against you seven times in a day, and seven times comes back to you and says, 'I repent,' forgive him." (Luke, 17:3-4)

As for those who persist in sin, **rebuke them in the presence of all,** so that the rest may stand in fear [of God]. (1 Timothy, 5:20)

Do not be misled: "Bad company corrupts good character." **Come back to your senses as you ought, and stop sinning;** for there are some who are ignorant of God—I say this to your shame. (1 Corinthians, 15:33-34)

**"If your brother sins against you, go and show him his fault,** just between the two of you. If he listens to you, you have won your brother over. But if he will not listen, take one or two others along, so that 'every matter may be established by the testimony of two or three witnesses.' **If he refuses to listen to them, tell it to the community of believers;** and if he refuses to listen even to the community of believers, treat him as you would a pagan or a tax collector. (Mathew, 18:15-17)

## Not to Cause Dissension

I urge you, brothers, **to watch out for those who cause divisions and put obstacles in your way** that are contrary to the teaching [God's commandments] you have learned. **Keep away from them.** (Romans, 16:17)

Jesus said to his disciples: **"Things that cause people to sin are bound to come, but woe to that person through whom they come.** It would be better for him to be thrown into the sea with a millstone tied around his neck than for him to cause one of these little ones to sin. (Luke, 17:1-2)

[God] will send out His angels, and they will weed out... **everything that causes sin and all who do evil. They will throw them into the fiery furnace [into the Fire of hell],** where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Then the righteous will shine like the sun in the kingdom of the Lord [paradise]. He who has ears, let him hear. (Matthew, 13:41-43)

[Jesus:] "... **Woe to the world because of the things that cause people to sin!** Such things must come, but **woe to the man through whom they come!**" (Matthew, 18:7)



# Repentance

Jesus answered them, "It is not the healthy who need a doctor, but the sick. **I have not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.**" (Luke, 5:31-32)

Repent, **then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out**, that times of refreshing may come from the Lord. (Acts, 3:19)

"You have no part or share in this ministry, because your heart is not right before God. **Repent of this wickedness and pray to the Lord. Perhaps He will forgive you for having such a thought in your heart.** For I see that you are full of bitterness and captive to sin." (Acts, 8:21-23)

... Jesus went into Galilee, proclaiming the Good News of God [God's commandments]. "The time has come," he said. "... [The day of judgment] is near. **Repent and believe the Good News [God's commandments]!**" (Mark, 1:14-15)

In those days John came, preaching in the Desert of Judea and saying, **"Repent, for... [the Day of Judgment] is near."** (Matthew, 3:1-2)

And the Lord's servant must not quarrel; instead, he must be kind to everyone, able to teach, not resentful. Those who oppose him he must gently instruct, **in the hope that God will grant them repentance leading them to a knowledge of the truth**, and that they will come to their senses and escape from the trap of the devil, who has taken them captive to do his will. (2 Timothy, 2:24-26)

[Jesus:] "Or those eighteen who died when the tower in Siloam fell on them—do you think they were more guilty than all the others living in Jerusalem? I tell you, no! **But unless you repent, you too will all perish.**" (Luke, 13:4-5)

Peter replied, **"Repent... everyone of you... for the forgiveness of your sins...** The promise is for you and your children and for all who are far off—for all whom the Lord our God will call." (Acts, 2:38-39)

... They praised God, saying, **"So then, God has granted even the other nations repentance unto life."** (Acts, 11:18)

[John:] **"Produce fruit in keeping with repentance.** And do not begin to say to yourselves, 'We have Abraham as our father.' For I tell you that out of these stones God can raise up children for Abraham. The axe is already at the root of the trees, and every tree that does not produce good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire." (Luke, 3:8-9)

He [Jesus] replied, "Blessed rather are those who hear the word of God and obey it." As the crowds increased, Jesus said, "This is a wicked generation... The men of Nineveh... **repented at the preaching of Jonah...**" (Luke, 11:28-29, 32)

... And so John came... **preaching... repentance for the forgiveness of sins.** (Mark, 1:4)

First to those in Damascus, then to those in Jerusalem and in all Judea, and to the other nations also, **I preached that they should repent and turn to God and prove their repentance by their deeds.** (Acts, 26:20)

**They went out and preached that people should repent.** (Mark, 6:12)

He went into all the country around the Jordan, preaching... **of repentance for the forgiveness of sins.** (Luke, 3:3)

So watch yourselves. "If your brother sins, rebuke him, and **if he repents, forgive him.** If he sins against you seven times in a day, and seven times comes back to you and says, '**I repent, forgive him.**'" (Luke, 17:3-4)

In the past God overlooked [forgave] such ignorance, but now **He commands all people everywhere to repent.** (Acts, 17:30)

I have declared to both Jews and Greeks **that they must turn to God in repentance and have faith** in... Jesus [for the approval of God]. (Acts, 20:21)

The rest of mankind that were not killed by these plagues **still did not repent of the work of their hands**; they did not stop worshiping demons, and idols of gold, silver, bronze, stone and wood—idols that cannot see or hear or walk. **Nor did they repent of their murders, their magic arts, their sexual immorality or their thefts.** (Revelation, 9:20-21)

The Lord is not slow in keeping His Promise, as some understand slowness. He **[God]** is patient with you [gives you time], **not wanting anyone to perish, but everyone to come to repentance.** But the day of the Lord will come [suddenly]... The heavens will disappear with a roar; the elements will be destroyed by fire, and the earth and everything in it will be laid bare. (2 Peter, 3:9-10)

Yet I hold this against you: You have forsaken your first love. Remember the height from which you have fallen! **Repent and do the things you did at first...** (Revelation, 2:4-5)

Those whom I love I rebuke and discipline. **So be earnest, and repent.** (Revelation, 3:19)

**Godly sorrow brings repentance that leads to salvation and leaves no regret,** but worldly sorrow brings death [torments of hell]. See what this godly sorrow has produced in you: what earnestness, what eagerness to clear yourselves, what indignation, what alarm, what longing, what concern, what readiness to see justice done. At every point you have proved yourselves to be innocent in this matter. (2 Corinthians, 7:10-11)

In the same way, I tell you, **there is rejoicing in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner who repents.** (Luke, 15:10)

**... Not laying again the foundation of repentance from acts that lead to death [that leads to the torments of hell],** and of faith in God... the laying on of hands, the resurrection of the dead, and eternal judgment. And God permitting, we will do so. It is impossible for those who have once

been enlightened, who have tasted the heavenly gift... who have tasted the goodness of the word of God and the powers of the coming age, **if they fall away, to be brought back to repentance...** over again and subjecting him to public disgrace. (Hebrews, 6:1-6)

## **Not to Profligate**

When they had all had enough to eat, he said to his disciples, **"Gather the pieces that are left over. Let nothing be wasted."** So they gathered them and filled twelve baskets with the pieces of the five barley loaves left over by those who had eaten. After the people saw the miraculous sign that Jesus did, they began to say, "Surely this is the Prophet who is to come into the world." (John, 6:12-14)

## **To Greet First When Entering Houses**

**When you enter a house, first say, 'Peace to this house.'** If a man of peace is there, your peace will rest on him; if not, it will return to you. (Luke, 10:5-6)

**As you enter the home, give it your greeting.** If the home is deserving, let your peace rest on it; if it is not, let your peace return to you. (Matthew, 10:12-13)

**... Jesus came and stood among them and said, "Peace be with you!"**... Again Jesus said, "Peace be with you!... (John, 20:19-21)

## **To Use the Phrase: If God Wills**

Now listen, you who say, "Today or tomorrow we will go to this or that city, spend a year there, carry on business and make money." Why, you do not even know what will happen tomorrow. What is your life? You are a mist that appears for a little while and then vanishes. Instead, **you ought to say, "If it is the Lord's Will, we will live and do this or that."** (James, 4:13-15)

... Let us go on unto perfection... **And God permitting, we will do so.** (Hebrews, 6:1, 3)

## **The Unity of Believers**

I appeal to you, **brothers... that all of you agree with one another so that there may be no divisions among you and that you may be perfectly united in mind and thought.** (1 Corinthians, 1:10)

But instead, **one brother goes to law against another—and this in front of unbelievers! The very fact that you have lawsuits among you means you have**

**been completely defeated already.** Why not rather be wronged? Why not rather be cheated? Instead, you yourselves cheat and do wrong, and you do this to your brothers. (1 Corinthians, 6:6-8)

**There is neither Jew nor Greek, slave nor free, male nor female, for you are all one in [your devotion to] Christ Jesus [for God's good pleasure].** (Galatians, 3:28)

**Let us not give up meeting together,** as some are in the habit of doing, but let us encourage one another and all the more as you see the Day approaching. (Hebrews, 10:25)

... Whatever happens, conduct yourselves in a manner worthy of the Gospel of Christ. Then, whether I come and see you or only hear about you in my absence, **I will know that you stand firm in one spirit, contending as one man for the faith of the Gospel without being frightened in any way by those who oppose you. This is a sign to them that they will be destroyed, but that you will be saved—and that by God [the law of God].** (Philippians, 1:27-28)

[Jesus:] **"He who is not with me [for God's good pleasure] is against me,** and he who does not gather with me, scatters." (Luke, 11:23)

Jesus knew their thoughts and said to them, **"Every country divided against itself will be ruined, and every city or household divided against itself will not stand."** (Matthew, 12:25; Luke 11:17; Mark 9:39)

... "I tell you that anyone who is angry with his brother will be subject to judgment. Again, anyone who says to his brother, [an offending word]... anyone who says, 'You fool!' will be in danger of the fire of hell. "Therefore, if you... **remember that your brother has something against you... first go and be reconciled to your brother;** then come and offer your gift." (Matthew, 5:21-24)

Who are my mother and my brothers?" he [Jesus] asked. Then he looked at those seated in a circle around him and said, **"Here are my mother and my brothers! Whoever does God's will is my brother and sister and mother."** (Mark, 3:33-35)

Be completely humble and gentle; **be patient, bearing with one another in love.** (Ephesians, 4:2)

You, my brothers, were called to be free. But do not use your freedom to indulge the sinful nature; rather, **serve one another in love.** The entire law is summed up in a single command: "Love your neighbor as yourself." **If you keep on biting and devouring each other, watch out or you will be destroyed by each other.** (Galatians, 5:13-15)

My purpose is that they may be encouraged in heart **and united in love,** so that they may have the full riches of complete understanding, in order that they may know the mystery of God... in whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge. (Colossians, 2:2-3)

So Jesus called them [teachers of religious law] and spoke to them in parables: "... **If a country is divided against itself, that country cannot stand. If a house is divided against itself, that house cannot stand...** In fact, no one can enter a strong man's house and carry off his possessions ..." (Mark, 3:23-27)

Now Jesus' mother and brothers came to see him, but they were not able to get near him because of the crowd. Someone told him, "Your mother and brothers are standing outside, wanting to see you." **He replied, "My mother and brothers are those who hear God's word and put it into practice."** (Luke, 8:19-21)

"Do not stop him," Jesus said, "**for whoever is not against you is for you.**" (Luke, 9:50)

**... And we ought to lay down our lives [for God's good pleasure] for our brothers.** (1 John, 3:16)

## Entrusting to Reliable Men

**Whoever can be trusted with very little can also be trusted with much, and whoever is dishonest with very little will also be dishonest with much.** So if you have not been trustworthy in handling worldly wealth, who will trust you with true riches? And if you have not been trustworthy with someone else's property, who will give you property of your own? (Luke, 16:10-12)

And the things you have heard me say in the presence of many witnesses **entrust to reliable men who will also be qualified to teach others.** Endure hardship with us like a good soldier [disciple, follower] of Christ Jesus. (2 Timothy, 2:2-3)

Do not give dogs what is sacred; do not throw your pearls to pigs. If you do, they may trample them under their feet, and then turn and tear you to pieces. (Matthew, 7:6)

## Ruling Justly

Woe to you...! You give a tenth of your spices—mint, dill and cummin. **But you have neglected the more important matters of the law [God's commandments]—justice,** mercy and faithfulness. You should have practiced the latter, without neglecting the former. (Matthew, 23:23; Luke 11:42)

**Stop judging by mere appearances, and make a right judgment.** (John, 7:24)

**Masters, provide your slaves with what is right and fair...** (Colossians, 4:1)

"Why do you call me good?" Jesus answered. "No one is good—except God alone. You know the commandments: 'Do not murder, do not commit adultery, do not steal, do **not give false testimony, do not defraud,** honor your father and mother.'" (Mark, 10:18-19)

... For in the same way you judge others, you will be judged [in the hereafter], and with the measure you use, it will be measured to you. (Matthew, 7:1-2)

**Who through faith conquered countries, administered justice,** and gained what was promised; who shut the mouths of lions. (Hebrews, 11:33)

Rather **he must be** hospitable, one who loves what is good, sensible, **just**, devout, self-controlled. (Titus, 1:8)

**You are witnesses**, and so is God, of how holy, **justly** and blameless we were among you who believed. (1 Thessalonians, 2:10)

My brothers... **don't show favoritism**. Suppose a man comes into your meeting wearing a gold ring and fine clothes, and a poor man in shabby clothes also comes in. If you show special attention to the man wearing fine clothes and say, "Here's a good seat for you," but say to the poor man, "You stand there" or "Sit on the floor by my feet," **have you not discriminated among yourselves and become judges with evil thoughts?** (James, 2:1-4)

... **You rule with a scepter of justice**. You have loved righteousness and hated wickedness... (Hebrews, 1:8-9)

"Here is my servant whom I have chosen, the one I love, in whom I delight... **and he will proclaim justice to the nations**... A bruised reed he will not break, and a smoldering wick he will not snuff out, till he leads justice to victory... (Matthew, 12:18-20)

**He [Moses] saw one of them being mistreated**... so he went to his defense... The next day Moses came upon two Israelites who were fighting. He tried to reconcile them by saying, '**Men, you are brothers; Why do you wrong each other?**'" (Acts, 7:24-26)

[Jesus:] "**You judge by human standards;** I pass judgment on no one. **But if I do judge, my decisions are right**..." (John, 8:15-16)

**But if you show favoritism, you sin** and are convicted by the Law [The Holy Book] as lawbreakers. (James, 2:9)

God "will give to each person according to what he has done." To those who by persistence in doing good seek glory, honor and immortality, he will give eternal life [heaven]. But for those who are self-seeking and **who reject the truth and follow evil, there will be wrath and anger**. (Romans, 2:6-8)

**Anyone who does wrong will be repaid for his wrong**, and there is no favoritism. (Colossians, 3:25)

**They will be paid back with harm for the harm they have done**... (2 Peter, 2:13)

... I charge you, in the Sight of God and Christ Jesus and the elect angels, **to keep these**

**instructions without partiality, and to do nothing out of favoritism...** do not share in the sins of others. Keep yourself pure. (1 Timothy, 5:20-22)

Make room for us in your hearts. We **have wronged no one**, we have corrupted no one, we have exploited no one. (2 Corinthians, 7:2)

They came to him and said, "Teacher, we know you are a man of integrity. **You aren't swayed by men, because you pay no attention to who they are;** but you teach the way of God in accordance with the truth. Is it right to pay taxes to Caesar or not? (Mark, 12:14; Matthew 22:16)

## **Abstaining from Evil**

**Do not repay anyone evil for evil.** Be careful to do what is light in the eyes of everybody. If it is possible, as far as it depends on you, live at peace with everyone. Do not take revenge, my friends, but leave room for God's wrath, for it is written: "It is mine to avenge; I will repay," says the Lord. On the contrary: "If your enemy is hungry, feed him; if he is thirsty, give him something to drink. In doing this, you will heap burning coals on his head." **Do not be overcome by evil, but overcome evil with good.** (Romans, 12:17-21)

**Get rid of all bitterness, rage and anger, brawling and slander, along with every form of malice.** Be kind and compassionate to one another, forgiving each other... (Ephesians, 4:31-32)

If it is encouraging, let him encourage; if it is contributing to the needs of others, let him give generously; if it is leadership, let him govern diligently; if it is showing mercy, let him do it cheerfully. Love must be sincere. **Hate what is evil;** cling to what is good. (Romans, 12:8-9)

Therefore, **get rid of all moral filth and the evil that is so prevalent** and humbly accept the word planted in you, which can save you. (James, 1:21)

**Do not repay evil with evil or insult with insult, but with blessing,** because to this you were called so that you may inherit a blessing. (1 Peter, 3:9)

**Love does no harm to its neighbor.** Therefore love is the fulfillment of the law [God's commandments]. (Romans, 13:10)

Therefore let us keep the Festival, **not with the old yeast, the yeast of malice and wickedness,** but with bread without yeast, the bread of sincerity and truth. (1 Corinthians, 5:8)

And we urge you, brothers, warn those who are idle, encourage the timid, help the weak, be patient with everyone. **Make sure that nobody pays back wrong for wrong,** but always try to be kind to each other and to everyone else. Be joyful always; pray continually; give thanks in all circumstances, for this is God's will for you... (1 Thessalonians, 5:14-18)

Test everything. Hold on to the good. **Avoid every kind of evil.** (1 Thessalonians, 5:21-22)

Who have wandered away from the truth; they say that the resurrection has already taken place, and they destroy the faith of some. Nevertheless, God's solid foundation stands firm, sealed with this inscription: "The Lord knows those who are His," and, **"Everyone who confesses the name of the Lord must turn away from wickedness."** (2 Timothy, 2:18-19)

**He must turn from evil and do good;** he must seek peace and pursue it. For the Eyes of the Lord [the Help of God] are on the righteous and His Ears are attentive to their prayer [God accepts the prayers of the righteous ones], but the... Lord is against those who do evil." (1 Peter, 3:11-12)

Love is patient, love is kind. It does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud. It is not rude, it is not self-seeking, it is not easily angered, **it keeps no record of wrongs.** Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth. Always protects, always trusts, always hopes, always perseveres. (1 Corinthians, 13:4-7)

What causes fights and quarrels among you? Don't they come from your desires that battle within you? You want something but don't get it. You kill and covet, but you cannot have what you want. You quarrel and fight. You do not have, because you do not ask God. When you ask, you do not receive, **because you ask with wrong motives, that you may spend what you get on your pleasures.** You adulterous people, don't you know that friendship with the world is hatred toward God? Anyone who chooses to be a friend of the world becomes an enemy of God. (James, 4:1-4)

## Doing Good Deeds

**And do not forget to do good** and to share with others, for with such sacrifices God is pleased. (Hebrews, 13:16)

And we urge you, brothers... Make sure that nobody pays back wrong for wrong, **but always try to be kind to each other and to everyone else.** (1 Thessalonians, 5:14-15)

**Bless those who persecute you; bless** and do not curse. (Romans, 12:14)

Dear friend, **do not imitate what is evil but what is good. Anyone who does what is good is [the one who acts in compliant with the approval of God] from God...** (3 John, 1:11)

**And let us consider how we may spur one another on toward love and good deeds.** (Hebrews, 10:24)

Therefore, as we have opportunity, **let us do good to all people, especially to those who belong to the family of believers.** (Galatians, 6:10)

[Jesus:] "But I tell you who hear me: Love your enemies, **do good to those who hate you, bless those who curse you,** pray for those who mistreat you." (Luke, 6:27-28)

[Jesus:] Give to everyone who asks you, and if anyone takes what belongs to you, do not demand it



back. **Do to others as you would have them do to you.** "If you love those who love you, what credit is that to you? Even 'sinners' love those who love them. **And if you do good to those who are good to you, what credit is that to you?** Even 'sinners' do that... But love your enemies, **do good to them**, and lend to them without expecting to get anything back. Then your reward will be great... (Luke, 6:30-35)

**"No good tree bears bad fruit**, nor does a bad tree bear good fruit. Each tree is recognized by its own fruit. People do not pick figs from thornbushes, or grapes from briars. **The good man brings good things out of the good stored up in his heart**, and the evil man brings evil things out of the evil stored up in his heart. For out of the overflow of his heart his mouth speaks. (Luke, 6:43-45; Matthew, 12:33-35)

And as for you, brothers, **never tire of doing what is right**... (2 Thessalonians, 3:13)

**For it is God's will that by doing good you should silence the ignorant talk of foolish men.** Live as free men, but do not use your freedom as a cover-up for evil; live as servants of God. Show proper respect to everyone: Love the brotherhood of believers, fear God... (1 Peter, 2:15-17)

... For, "Whoever would love life and see good days must keep his tongue from evil and his lips from deceitful speech. He must turn from evil and **do good; he must seek peace and pursue it.** For the eyes of the Lord [the mercy and help of God] are on the righteous... (1 Peter, 3:10-12)

And come out—**those who have done good will rise to live [to live the endless life of paradise]**, and those who have done evil will rise to be condemned [to suffer the torment in the hell]. (John, 5:29)

... **Jesus... went around doing good** and healing all who were under the power of the devil, because God was with him. (Acts, 10:37-38)

Love must be sincere. Hate what is evil; **cling to what is good.** (Romans, 12:9)

Because you know that **the Lord will reward everyone for whatever good he does**, whether he is slave or free. (Ephesians, 6:8)

Each of us **should please his neighbor [for God's good pleasure] for his good**, to build him up. (Romans, 15:2)

We work hard with our own hands. **When we are cursed, we bless**; when we are persecuted, we endure it. (1 Corinthians, 4:12)

**He must turn from evil and do good**; he must seek peace and pursue it. (1 Peter, 3:11)

**Who is going to harm you if you are eager to do good?** But even if you should suffer for what is right, you are blessed. "Do not fear what they fear; do not be frightened."... Always be prepared to give an answer to everyone who asks you to give the reason for the hope that you have. But do this with gentleness and respect, keeping a clear conscience... (1 Peter, 3:13-16)

But if a widow has children or grandchildren, these should learn first of all to **put their religion into practice by caring for their own family and so repaying their parents and grandparents, for this is pleasing to God.** (1 Timothy, 5:4)

Command those who are rich in this present world not to be arrogant nor to put their hope in wealth, which is so uncertain, but to put their hope in God, who richly provides us with everything for our enjoyment. **Command them to do good, to be rich in good deeds, and to be generous and willing to share.** In this way they will lay up treasure for themselves as a firm foundation for the coming age, so that they may take hold of the life that is truly life. (1 Timothy, 6:17-19)

But how is it to your credit if you receive a beating for doing wrong and endure it? But **if you suffer for doing good and you endure it, this is commendable before God.** (1 Peter, 2:20)

Therefore, as God's chosen people [faithful servants], holy and dearly loved, **clothe yourselves with** compassion, **kindness**, humility, gentleness and patience. (Colossians, 3:12)

But because of your stubbornness and your unrepentant heart, you are storing up wrath against yourself for the day of God's Wrath, when His righteous judgment will be revealed. God "will give to each person according to what he has done." **To those who by persistence in doing good seek glory, honor and immortality, He will give eternal life [in paradise].** But for those who are self-seeking and who reject the truth and follow evil, there will be wrath and anger. There will be trouble and distress for every human being who does evil... **but glory, honor and peace for everyone who does good...** (Romans, 2:5-10)

**I myself am convinced**, my brothers, **that you yourselves are full of goodness**, complete in knowledge and competent to instruct one another. (Romans, 15:14)

Everyone has heard about your obedience, so I am full of joy over you; but **I want you to be wise about what is good**, and innocent about what is evil (Romans, 16:19)

For **the fruit of the light consists in all goodness, righteousness and truth** and find out what pleases the Lord. Have nothing to do with the fruitless deeds of darkness, but rather expose them. For it is shameful even to mention what the disobedient do in secret. (Ephesians, 5:9-12)

I would have liked to keep him with me so that he could take your place in helping me while I am in chains for the Gospel. But I did not want to do anything without your consent, **so that any favor you do will be spontaneous and not forced.** (Philemon, 1:13-14)

Like Sarah, who obeyed Abraham and called him her master. You are her daughters **if you do what is right and do not give way to fear.** (1 Peter, 3:6)

So then, those who suffer according to God's Will should **commit themselves to their faithful Creator and continue to do good.** (1 Peter, 4:19)

With this in mind, **we constantly pray for you**, that our God may count you worthy of His calling,

and **that by His power He may fulfill every good purpose of yours** and every act prompted by your faith. (2 Thessalonians, 1:11)

Rather, as servants of God **we commend ourselves in every way:** in great endurance; in troubles, hardships and distresses; in beatings, imprisonments and riots; in hard work, sleepless nights and hunger; in purity, understanding, patience and **kindness... and in sincere love**; in truthful speech and in the power of God; with weapons of righteousness in the right hand and in the left... (2 Corinthians, 6:4-8)

"Honor your father and mother"—which is the first commandment with a promise—"that it may go well with you and that you may enjoy long life on the earth." (Ephesians, 6:2-3)

**I am saying this for your own good**, not to restrict you, but that you may live in a right way in undivided devotion to the Lord. (1 Corinthians, 7:35)

In Joppa there was a disciple named Tabitha... **who was always doing good and helping the poor.** (Acts, 9:36)

The men replied, "We have come from Cornelius the centurion. He is **a righteous and God-fearing man, who is respected** by all the Jewish people"... (Acts, 10:22)

## **Abstaining from Hypocrisy and Showing-off**

**Be careful not to do your 'acts of righteousness' before men, to be seen by them.** If you do, you will have no reward from your Lord... (Matthew, 6:1)

... **So when you give to the needy, do not announce it with trumpets, as the hypocrites do... to be honored by men.** I tell you the truth, they have received their reward in full. **But when you give to the needy, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing**, so that your giving may be in secret. Then... [God] Who sees what is done in secret, will reward you. (Matthew, 6:2-4)

**And when you pray, do not be like the hypocrites, for they love to pray standing... on the street corners to be seen by men.** I tell you the truth, they have received their reward in full. (Matthew, 6:5)

Then Jesus said to the crowds and to his disciples: "... So you must obey them and do everything they tell you. **But do not do what they do, for they do not practice what they preach.** They tie up heavy loads and put them on men's shoulders, but they themselves are not willing to lift a finger to move them. **"Everything they do is done for men to see..."** (Matthew, 23:1-5)

[Jesus:] "Woe to you... you hypocrites! You are like whitewashed tombs, which look beautiful on the outside but on the inside are full of dead men's bones and everything

unclean. **In the same way, on the outside you appear to people as righteous but on the inside you are full of hypocrisy and wickedness.** (Matthew, 23:27-28)

When you fast, do not look somber as the hypocrites do, **for they disfigure their faces to show men they are fasting...** (Matthew, 6:16)

They devour widows' houses and **for a show make lengthy prayers. Such men will be punished most severely.** (Mark, 12:40; Luke 20:47)

Then Jesus said to his host, "... **But when you give a banquet, invite the poor, the crippled, the lame, the blind, and you will be blessed. Although they cannot repay you, you will be repaid at the resurrection of the righteous.**" When one of those at the table with him heard this, he said to Jesus, "Blessed is the man who will eat at the feast in the kingdom of God [paradise]." (Luke, 14:12-15)

## **Cleansing the Lower Self, Abstaining from Self-Centered Passions of the Lower Self**

**The acts of the sinful nature are obvious: sexual immorality, impurity and debauchery; idolatry and witchcraft; hatred, discord, jealousy, fits of rage, selfish ambition, dissensions, factions and envy; drunkenness, orgies, and the like. I warn you, as I did before, that those who live like this will not inherit the kingdom of God [paradise].** But the fruit of the Spirit [that is Divine] is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness and self-control. Against such things there is no law. (Galatians, 5:19-23)

In order that the righteous requirements of the law [God's commandments] might be fully met in us, who do not live according to the sinful nature but according to the Spirit of God [the approval of God]. Those who live according to the sinful nature have their minds set on what that nature desires; but those who live in accordance with the Spirit of God [approval of God] have their minds set on what the nature desires. **The mind of sinful man is death [the torment of hell], but the mind controlled by the Spirit [God] is life and peace; the sinful mind is hostile to.** It does not submit to God's law, nor can it do so. **Those controlled by the sinful nature cannot please God.** (Romans, 8:4-8)

Surely you heard of him [Jesus] and were taught in him in accordance with the truth... **You were taught, with regard to your former way of life, to put off your old self, which is being corrupted by its deceitful desires;** to be made new in the attitude of your minds; and to put on the new self... in true righteousness and holiness. (Ephesians, 4:21-24)

So I say, live by the God's Spirit, and **you will never fulfill the desires of the flesh.** (Galatians, 5:16)

**Put to death, therefore, whatever belongs to your earthly nature: sexual immorality, impurity, lust, evil desires and greed, which is idolatry.** Because of these, the wrath of God is coming. You used to walk in these ways, in the life you once lived. But now you must rid yourselves of all such things as these: anger, rage, malice, slander, and filthy language from your lips. Do not lie to each other, since you have taken off your old self with its practices... (Colossians, 3:5-10)

**For if you live according to the sinful nature, you will die [go to hell]; but if by the Spirit of God [for the approval of God] you put to death the misdeeds of the body, you will live [go to paradise].** (Romans, 8:13)

**For when we were controlled by the sinful nature, the sinful passions aroused... were at work in our bodies,** so that we bore fruit for death [the torments of hell]. (Romans, 7:5)

**The one who sows to please his sinful nature, from that nature will reap destruction [the torment of hell]; the one who sows to please [God]... will reap eternal life [paradise].** Let us not become weary in doing good, for at the proper time we will reap a harvest if we do not give up. Therefore, as we have opportunity, let us do good to all people, especially to those who belong to the family of believers. (Galatians, 6:8-10)

Through these He [God] has given us His very great and precious promises, **so that through them you... escape the corruption in the world caused by evil desires.** For this very reason, make every effort to add to your faith goodness; and to goodness, knowledge; and to knowledge, self-control; and to self-control, perseverance; and to perseverance, godliness; and to godliness, brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness, love. ( 2 Peter, 1:4-7)

These men are springs without water and mists driven by a storm. Blackest darkness is reserved for them. **For they mouth empty, boastful words and, by appealing to the lustful desires of sinful human nature, they entice people who are just escaping from those who live in error. They promise them freedom, while they themselves are slaves of depravity—for a man is a slave to whatever has mastered him.** (2 Peter, 2:17-19)

As obedient children, **do not conform to the evil desires you had when you lived in ignorance.** But just as He Who called you is holy, so be holy in all you do... (1 Peter, 1:14-15)

Dear friends, I urge you, as aliens and strangers in the world, **to abstain from sinful desires, which war against your soul.** Live such good lives among the pagans that, though they accuse you of doing wrong, they may see your good deeds and glorify God on the day He visits us. (1 Peter, 2:11-12)

The night is nearly over; the day is almost here. So let us put aside the deeds of darkness and put on the armor of light [spiritual armors]. Let us behave decently, as in the daytime, not in orgies and drunkenness, not in sexual immorality and debauchery, not in dissension and jealousy... **[Do] not**

**think about how to gratify the desires of the sinful nature.** (Romans, 13:12-14)

**People who want to get rich fall into temptation and a trap and into many foolish and harmful desires that plunge men into ruin and destruction.** For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil. Some people, eager for money, have wandered from the faith and pierced themselves with many griefs. (1 Timothy, 6:9-10)

**Many will follow their shameful ways** and will bring the way of truth into disrepute. In their greed these will exploit you with stories they have made up. Their condemnation has long been hanging over them, and their destruction has not been sleeping. (2 Peter, 2:2-3)

As for you, you were dead in your transgressions and sins, in which you used to live when you followed the ways of this world... **All of us also lived among them at one time, gratifying the cravings of our sinful nature and following its desires and thoughts.** Like the rest, we were by nature objects of wrath. (Ephesians, 2:1-3)

If this is so, then the Lord knows how to rescue godly men from trials and **to hold the unrighteous for the day of judgment, while continuing their punishment. This is especially true of those who follow the corrupt desire of the sinful nature** and despise authority. Bold and arrogant, these men are not afraid to slander celestial beings... But these men blaspheme in matters they do not understand. They are like brute beasts, creatures of instinct, born only to be caught and destroyed, and like beasts they too will perish. They will be paid back with harm for the harm they have done. Their idea of pleasure is to carouse in broad daylight. They are blots and blemishes, reveling in their pleasures while they feast with you. With eyes full of adultery, they never stop sinning; they seduce the unstable; they are experts in greed—an accursed brood! (2 Peter, 2:9-14)

## **Doing Good Works and Competing to Do Good**

You, my brothers, were called to be free. But do not use your freedom to indulge the sinful nature [to abide by your lower-self]; rather, **serve one another in love.** (Galatians, 5:13)

**Serve wholeheartedly, as if you were serving the Lord [for God's good pleasure],** not men, because you know that the Lord will reward everyone for whatever good he does, whether he is slave or free. (Ephesians, 6:7-8)

[Jesus:] "Whoever serves me [for God's good pleasure] must follow me; and where I am, my servant also will be. **God will honor the one who serves me.**" (John, 12:26)

Each one should use whatever gift he has received **to serve others, faithfully administering God's grace in its various forms.** If anyone speaks, he should do it as one speaking the very words of God. **If anyone serves, he should do it with the strength God provides,** so that in all things God may be praised... (1 Peter, 4:10-11)

Jesus said to them, "The kings of the Gentiles lord it over them; and those who exercise authority over them call themselves benefactors. **But you are not to be like that. Instead, the greatest among you should be like the youngest, and the one who rules like the one who serves.**" (Luke, 22:25-26)

**This service that you perform is not only supplying the needs of God's people [those who devote themselves to God]** but is also overflowing in many expressions of thanks to God. **Because of the service by which you have proved yourselves**, men will praise God for the obedience that accompanies your confession of the Gospel of Christ, and for your generosity in sharing with them and with everyone else. (2 Corinthians, 9:12-13)

**Do you not know that in a race all the runners run, but only one gets the prize? Run in such a way as to get the prize. Everyone who competes in the games** goes into strict training. They do it to get a crown that will not last; but we do it to get a crown that will last forever. Therefore **I do not run like a man running aimlessly...** (1 Corinthians, 9:24-27)

Religion that God... **accepts as pure and faultless is this: to look after orphans and widows in their distress** and to keep oneself from being polluted by the world. (James, 1:27)

In reply Jesus said: "A man was going down from Jerusalem to Jericho, when he fell into the hands of robbers. They stripped him of his clothes, beat him and went away, leaving him half dead... But a Samaritan... came where the man was... **Then he put the man on his own donkey, took him to an inn and took care of him.** The next day he took out two silver coins and gave them to the innkeeper. 'Look after him,' he said, 'and when I return, I will reimburse you for any extra expense you may have.' "Which of these three do you think was a neighbor to the man who fell into the hands of robbers?" The expert in the law [religious scholar] replied, **"The one who had mercy on him."** **Jesus told him, "Go and do likewise."** (Luke, 10:30-37)

In Joppa there was a disciple named Tabitha (which, when translated, is Dorcas), **who was always doing good and helping the poor.** (Acts, 9:36)

The disciples, each according to his ability, **decided to provide help for the brothers living in Judea.** This they did, sending their gift to the elders by Barnabas and Saul. (Acts, 11:29-30)

In Galilee **these women had followed him and cared for his needs...** (Mark, 15:41)

You yourselves know that **these hands of mine have supplied my own needs and the needs of my companions.** (Acts, 20:34)

Because **anyone who serves Christ [for God's good pleasure] in this way is pleasing to God** and approved by men. (Romans, 14:18)

Therefore **I glory** in Christ Jesus [as a person devoted to Jesus for God's good pleasure] **in my service to God.** (Romans, 15:17)

Be devoted to one another in brotherly love. Honor one another above yourselves. Never be lacking in zeal... serving the Lord. Be joyful in hope, patient in affliction, faithful in prayer. **Share with God's people [those who devote themselves to God] who are in need. Practice hospitality.** (Romans, 12:10-14)

**Now, however, I am on my way to Jerusalem in the service of the saints [those who devote themselves to God] there.** For Macedonia and Achaia were **pleased to make a contribution for the poor among the saints in Jerusalem...** **So after I have completed this task and have made sure that they have received this fruit,** I will go to Spain and visit you on the way... (Romans, 15:25-29)

[A widow]... **is well known for her good deeds... helping those in trouble and devoting herself to all kinds of good deeds...** (1 Timothy, 5:10)

**If any woman who is a believer has widows in her family, she should help them** and not let the church be burdened with them, so that the church can help those widows who are really in need. (1 Timothy, 5:16)

**The poor you will always have with you, and you can help them any time you want.** But you will not always have me. (Mark, 14:7)

**Selling their possessions and goods, they gave to anyone as he had need.** (Acts, 2:45)

There were no needy persons among them. **For from time to time those who owned lands or houses sold them, brought the money from the sales and bring the money to the apostles, and it was distributed to anyone as he had need.** (Acts, 4:34-35)

What good is it, my brothers, **if a man claims to have faith but has no deeds? Can such faith save him? Suppose a brother or sister is without clothes and daily food. If one of you says to him, "Go, I wish you well; keep warm and well fed," but does nothing about his physical needs, what good is it?...** You see that his [Abraham's] faith and his actions were working together, and his faith was made complete by what he did. (James, 2:14-22)

Do not work for food that spoils, **but for food that endures to eternal life...** (John, 6:27)

**... These women were helping to support them [Jesus and his disciples] out of their own means.** (Luke, 8:3)

**Our people must learn to devote themselves to doing what is good,** in order that they may provide for daily necessities and not live unproductive lives. (Titus, 3:14)

Greet Tryphena and Tryphosa, **those women who work hard in the Lord [on God's path].** Greet my dear friend Persis, **another woman who has worked very hard in the Lord [on God's path].** (Romans, 16:12)

You know that the household of Stephanas were **the first converts in Achaia, and they have**



**devoted themselves to the service of the saints [those who devote themselves to God].** I urge you, brothers, to submit to such as these and to everyone who joins in the work, and labors at it. (1 Corinthians, 16:15-16)

And we are sending along with him the brother who is praised by all the churches for his service to the Gospel. What is more, he was chosen by the churches to accompany us as we carry **the offering, which we administer in order to honor the Lord Himself and to show our eagerness to help.** (2 Corinthians, 8:18-19)

You know that Timothy has proved himself.. **He has served with me in the work of the Gospel.** (Philippians, 2:22)

**Those who have believing masters are not to show less respect for them because they are brothers.** Instead, they are to serve them even better, because those who benefit from their service are believers, and dear to them. **These are the things you are to teach and urge on them.** (1 Timothy, 6:2)

... On the contrary, when he was in Rome, he searched hard for me until he found me. **May the Lord grant that he will find mercy from the Lord on that day!** You know very well in how many ways he helped me **in Ephesus.** (2 Timothy, 1:16-18)

... **So that any favor you do will be spontaneous and not forced.** (Philemon, 1:13-14)

God... **will not forget your work** and the love you have shown Him **as you have helped His people [those who devote themselves to God]** and continue to help them. We want each of you to show this same diligence to the very end, in order to make your hope sure. We do not want you to become lazy, but to imitate those who through faith and patience inherit what has been promised. (Hebrews, 6:10-12)

**I know your deeds, your love and faith, your service and perseverance,** and that you are now doing more than you did at first. (Revelation, 2:19)

**Therefore, since through God's mercy we have this ministry, we do not lose heart.** Rather, we have renounced secret and shameful ways; we do not use deception, nor do we distort the word of God. On the contrary, by setting forth the truth plainly we commend ourselves to every man's conscience in the Sight of God. (2 Corinthians, 4:1-2)

He [Jesus] touched her hand and the fever left her, and **she got up and began to serve for him [for God's good pleasure].** (Matthew, 8:15)

For when David had **served God's purpose in his own generation, he fell asleep;** he was buried with his fathers and his body decayed. (Acts, 13:36)

**Their purpose is to prepare God's people [who devote themselves to God] to serve...** (Ephesians, 4:12)

## Obeying God's Commandments at the Same Time as Advising Others to Heed Them

**Do not merely listen to the word, and so deceive yourselves. Do what it says.** (James, 1:22)

... The man who looks intently into the perfect law [God's commandments] that gives freedom, and continues to do this, **not forgetting what he has heard, but doing it—he will be blessed in what he does.** (James, 1:25)

... All who sin under the law [God's commandments] will be judged by the law. For **it is not those who hear the law who are righteous in God's Sight, but it is those who obey the law who will be declared righteous.** (Romans, 2:12-13)

As it is, you boast and brag. All such boasting is evil. **Anyone, then, who knows the good he ought to do and doesn't do it, sins.** (James, 4:16-17)

## Respecting Devout Parents

[Jesus:] "You know the commandments [of God]: 'Do not murder, do not commit adultery, do not steal, do not give false testimony, do not defraud, **honor your father and mother.**'" (Mark, 10:19)

[Jesus:] "... **Honor your father and mother...**" (Luke, 18:20; Matthew, 19:19)

Children, **obey your parents in the Lord [for the approval of God]**, for this is right. "**Honor your father and mother**"—which is the first commandment with a promise—"that it may go well with you and that you may enjoy long life on the earth." Fathers, do not exasperate your children; instead, bring them up in the training and instruction of the Lord. (Ephesians, 6:1-4)

For Moses said, '**Honor your father and your mother**'... (Mark, 7:10)

# EXAMPLES OF THE MORAL VIRTUES ADVISED IN THE GOSPEL

## To Be Humble and Avoid Arrogance

Young men... **All of you, clothe yourselves with humility toward one another, because, "God opposes the proud but gives grace to the humble."** (1 Peter, 5:5)

**Be completely humble and gentle;** be patient, bearing with one another in love. (Ephesians, 4:2)

**The greatest among you will be your servant. For whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted.** (Matthew, 23:11-12)

**Do nothing out of selfish ambition or vain conceit, but in humility consider others better than yourselves.** (Philippians, 2:3)

Jesus said to them, "The kings of the Gentiles lord it over them; and those who exercise authority over them call themselves benefactors. **But you are not to be like that. Instead, the greatest among you should be like the youngest, and the one who rules like the one who serves.** For who is greater, the one who is at the table or the one who serves? Is it not the one who is at the table? But I am among you as one who serves. You are those who have stood by me in my trials. (Luke, 22:25-28)

Jesus called them together and said, "You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their high officials exercise authority over them. Not so with you. **Instead, whoever wants to become great among you must be your servant.** (Matthew, 20:25-26)

... "You know that those who are regarded as rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their high officials exercise authority over them. Not so with you. Instead, **whoever wants to become great among you must be your servant, and whoever wants to be first must be slave of all.** For even the Son of Man [Jesus] did not come to be served, but to serve..." (Mark, 10:41-45)

At that time the disciples came to Jesus and asked, "Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven [in the hereafter]?" He called a little child and had him stand among them. And he said: "I tell you the truth, unless you change and become like little children, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven [paradise]. Therefore, **whoever humbles himself like this child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven [in the hereafter].** (Matthew, 18:1-4)

... Jesus called the Twelve and said, "**If anyone wants to be first, he must be the very last, and the servant of all.**" (Mark, 9:35)

"See that you **do not look down on one of these little ones**... (Matthew, 18:10-11)

**An argument started among the disciples as to which of them would be the greatest.** Then he [Jesus] said to them, "... For he who is least among you all—he is the greatest." (Luke, 9:46-48)

When he noticed how the guests picked the places of honor at the table, he told them this parable: "When someone invites you to a wedding feast, do not take the place of honor, for a person more distinguished than you may have been invited. If so, the host who invited both of you will come and say to you, 'Give this man your seat.' Then, humiliated, you will have to take the least important place. But when you are invited, take the lowest place, so that when your host comes, he will say to you, 'Friend, move up to a better place.' Then you will be honored in the presence of all your fellow guests. For **everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted.**" (Luke, 14:7-11)

**To some who were confident of their own righteousness and looked down on everybody else,** Jesus told this parable: "... **I tell you that...** For **everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted.**" (Luke, 18:9,14)

Live in harmony with one another. **Do not be proud, but be willing to associate with people of low position. Do not be conceited.** Do not repay anyone evil for evil. Be careful to do what is right in the eyes of everybody. If it is possible, as far as it depends on you, live at peace with everyone. (Romans, 12:16-18)

... "**God opposes the proud but gives grace to the humble.**" Submit yourselves, then, to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you... (James, 4:6-8)

[Jesus:] "Come to me, all you who are weary and burdened, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you and learn from me, for **I am gentle and humble in heart**, and you will find rest for your souls. For my yoke is easy and my burden is light." (Matthew, 11:28-30)

... Knowledge puffs up, but love builds up. **The man who thinks he knows something does not yet know as he ought to know...** (1 Corinthians, 8:1-3)

**Humble yourselves before the Lord...** (James, 4:10)

Finally, all of you, live in harmony with one another; be sympathetic, love as brothers, **be** compassionate and **humble**. Do not repay evil with evil or insult with insult, but with blessing [being made holy], because to this you were called so that you may inherit a blessing. (1 Peter, 3:8-9)

So you also, when you have done everything you were told to do, should say, '**We are unworthy servants; we have only done our duty.**' " (Luke, 17:10)

Command those who are rich in this present world **not to be arrogant** nor to put their hope in

wealth, which is so uncertain, but to put their hope in God, Who richly provides us with everything for our enjoyment. (1 Timothy, 6:17)

Brothers, think of what you were when you were called. Not many of you were wise by human standards; not many were influential; not many were of noble birth. But **God chose the foolish things of the world to shame the wise; God chose the weak things of the world to shame the strong. He chose the lowly things of this world and the despised things—and the things that are not—to nullify the things that are,** so that no one may boast before Him... Therefore, as it is written: "Let him who boasts boast in the Lord." (1 Corinthians, 1:26-31)

**Your boasting is not good.** Don't you know that a little yeast works through the whole batch of dough? Get rid of the old yeast that you may be a new batch without yeast... Therefore let us keep the Festival, not with the old yeast, the yeast of malice and wickedness, but with bread without yeast, the bread of sincerity and truth. (1 Corinthians, 5:6-8)

**Humble yourselves, therefore, under God's mighty hand [God's might, in the Presence of His power], that he may lift you up** in due time. (1 Peter, 5:6)

He said to them, "You are the ones who justify yourselves in the eyes of men, but God knows your hearts. **What is highly valued among men is detestable in God's Sight.** (Luke, 16:15)

Love is patient, love is kind. **It [loving for the approval of God, experiencing true love] does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud.** (1 Corinthians, 13:4)

If some of the branches have been broken off, and you, though a wild olive shoot, have been grafted in among the others and now share in the nourishing sap from the olive root, do not boast over those branches. If you do, consider this: **You do not support the root, but the root supports you.** You will say then, "Branches were broken off so that I could be grafted in." Granted. But they were broken off because of unbelief, and you stand by faith. **Do not be arrogant, but be afraid [of God].** (Romans, 11:17-20)

We do not dare to classify or compare ourselves with some who commend themselves. When they measure themselves by themselves and compare themselves with themselves, they are not wise. **We, however, will not boast beyond proper limits, but will confine our boasting to the field God has assigned to us, a field that reaches even to you.** (2 Corinthians, 10:12-13)

Even if I should choose to boast, I would not be a fool, because I would be speaking the truth. But **I refrain, so no one will think more of me than is warranted by what I do or say.** (2 Corinthians, 12:6)

**Let us not become conceited,** provoking and envying each other. (Galatians, 5:26)

Who is wise and understanding among you? Let him show it by his good life, **by deeds done in the humility that comes from wisdom.** But if you harbor bitter envy and selfish ambition in your

hearts, **do not boast** about it or deny the truth... For where you have envy and selfish ambition, there you find disorder and every evil practice. But the wisdom that comes from heaven [in line with God's approval] is first of all pure; then peace-loving, considerate, submissive, full of mercy and good fruit, impartial and sincere. (James, 3:13-17)

## To Be Generous and Avoid Parsimony

Command those who are rich in this present world not to be arrogant nor to put their hope in wealth, which is so uncertain, but to put their hope in God, who richly provides us with everything for our enjoyment. **Command them** to do good, to be rich in good deeds, and **to be generous and willing to share. In this way they will lay up treasure for themselves as a firm foundation for the coming age, so that they may take hold of the life that is truly life [paradise].** (1 Timothy, 6:17-19)

If it is encouraging, let him encourage; **if it is contributing to the needs of others, let him give generously**; if it is leadership, let him govern diligently; if it is showing mercy, let him do it cheerfully. (Romans, 12:8)

**So I will very gladly spend for you [for God's sake] everything I have and expend myself as well...** (2 Corinthians, 12:15)

[Jesus:] "But I tell you who hear me:... **If someone takes your cloak, do not stop him from taking your tunic. Give to everyone who asks you, and if anyone takes what belongs to you, do not demand it back.** Do to others as you would have them do to you... **And if you lend to those from whom you expect repayment, what credit is that to you?** Even 'sinners' lend to 'sinners,' expecting to be repaid in full. But love your enemies, do good to them, and **lend to them without expecting to get anything back. Then your reward will be great...** (Luke, 6:27-35)

**You will be made rich in every way so that you can be generous on every occasion, and... your generosity will result in thanksgiving to God...** Because of the service by which you have proved yourselves, men will praise God for the obedience that accompanies your confession of the Gospel of Christ, and for **your generosity in sharing with them and with everyone else.** (2 Corinthians, 9:11-13)

So I thought it necessary to urge the brothers to visit you in advance and finish the arrangements for **the generous gift you had promised (to give).** Then **it will be ready as a generous gift, not as one grudgingly given.** Remember this: Whoever sows sparingly will also reap sparingly, and whoever sows generously will also reap generously. Each man should give what he has decided in his heart to give, not reluctantly or under compulsion, for God loves a cheerful giver. And God is able to make

all grace abound to you, so that in all things at all times, having all that you need, you will abound in every good work. (2 Corinthians, 9:5-8)

... Out of the most severe trial, **their overflowing joy and their extreme poverty welled up in rich generosity. For I testify that they gave as much as they were able, and even beyond their ability.** Entirely on their own, they urgently pleaded with us for the privilege of sharing in this service to the saints [who have devoted themselves to God]. (2 Corinthians, 8:1-4)

... The ground of a certain rich man produced a good crop. He thought to himself, 'What shall I do? I have no place to store my crops.' Then he said, 'This is what I'll do. I will tear down my barns and build bigger ones, and there I will store all my grain and my goods. And I'll say to myself, "You have plenty of good things laid up for many years. Take life easy; eat, drink and be merry."' But God said to him, 'You fool! This very night your life will be demanded from you. Then who will get what you have prepared for yourself?' **This is how it will be with anyone who stores up things for himself but is not rich toward God.** (Luke, 12:16-21)

John answered, **"The man with two tunics should share with him who has none, and the one who has food should do the same."** (Luke, 3:11)

As you go, preach this message: 'The kingdom of heaven [paradise] is near.' Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse those who have leprosy, drive out demons. **Freely you have received, freely give.** Do not take along any gold or silver or copper in your belts. (Matthew, 10:7-9)

... Much grace was upon them all [believers]. There were no needy persons among them. For from time to time **those who owned lands or houses sold them, brought the money from the sales and bring the money to the apostles, and it was distributed to anyone as he had need.** (Acts, 4:33-35)

**The believers were together and had everything in common. Selling their possessions and goods, they gave to anyone as he had need.** Every day they continued to meet together in the temple courts. They broke bread in their homes and ate together with glad and sincere hearts, praising God and enjoying the favor of all the people. And the Lord added to their number daily those who were being saved [who attained guidance]. (Acts, 2:44-47)

**Keep your lives free from the love of money and be content with what you have,** because God has said, "Never will I leave you; never will I forsake you." (Hebrews, 13:6)

**"Do not store up for yourselves treasures on earth,** where moth and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where moth and rust do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also. (Matthew, 6:19-21)

But **when you give a banquet, invite the poor, the crippled, the lame, the blind,** and you will be blessed. **Although they cannot repay you,** you will be repaid at the resurrection of the

righteous. (Luke, 14:13-14)

Jesus sat down opposite the place where the offerings were put and watched the crowd putting their money into the temple treasury. Many rich people threw in large amounts. But a poor widow came and put in two very small copper coins, worth only a fraction of a penny. Calling his disciples to him, Jesus said, **"I tell you the truth, this poor widow has put more into the treasury than all the others. They all gave out of their wealth; but she, out of her poverty, put in everything—all she had to live on."** (Mark, 12:41-44; Luke 21:1-4)

"Teacher," he declared, "all these I have kept since I was a boy." **Jesus looked at him and loved him. "One thing you lack," he said. "Go, sell everything you have and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven [in the hereafter]. Then come, follow me."** (Mark, 10:20-21)

Here is a trustworthy saying: If anyone sets his heart on being an overseer, he desires a noble task. Now the overseer must be above reproach... temperate, self-controlled, respectable, hospitable, able to teach, not given to drunkenness, not violent but gentle, not quarrelsome, **not a lover of money.** (1 Timothy, 3:1-3)

Then he said to them, "Watch out! **Be on your guard against all kinds of greed;** a man's life does not consist in the abundance of his possessions." (Luke, 12:15)

In everything I did, I showed you that by this kind of hard work **we must help the weak,** remembering the words... **Jesus himself said: 'It is more blessed to give than to receive.'**" (Acts, 20:35)

## **Being Alert and Self-Controlled for God's Sake**

**So then, let us not be like others, who are asleep, but let us be alert and self-controlled.** For those who sleep, sleep at night... But since we belong to the day, let us be self-controlled, putting on faith and love as a breastplate, and the hope of salvation as a helmet. (1 Thessalonians, 5:6-8)

**Be self-controlled and alert.** Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour. Resist him, standing firm in the faith, because you know that your brothers throughout the world are undergoing the same kind of sufferings. (1 Peter, 5:8-9)

... And pray... on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, **be alert and always keep on praying [to God]** for all the saints [who have devoted themselves to God]. (Ephesians, 6:17-18)

... [Jesus:] "Stay here and **keep watch with me.**" (Matthew, 26:38)

**Be very careful, then, how you live—not as unwise but as wise,** making the most of every opportunity, because the days are evil. Therefore do not be foolish, but understand what the Lord's will is. (Ephesians, 5:15-17)



**Be on your guard; stand firm in the faith;** be men of courage; be strong. Do everything in love. You know that the household of Stephanas were the first converts in Achaia, and they have devoted themselves to the service of the saints [who are devoted to God]. I urge you, brothers, to submit to such as these and to everyone who joins in the work, and labors at it. (1 Corinthians 16:13-16)

**Be careful, or your hearts will be weighed down with dissipation, drunkenness and the anxieties of life,** and that day [the day of judgment], will close on you unexpectedly like a trap. For it will come upon all those who live on the face of the whole earth. **Be always on the watch,** and pray that you may be able to escape all that is about to happen..." (Luke, 21:34-36)

**So watch yourselves.** "If your brother sins, rebuke him, and if he repents, forgive him. If he sins against you seven times in a day, and seven times comes back to you and says, 'I repent,' forgive him." (Luke, 17:3-4)

Do not repay anyone evil for evil. **Be careful to do what is right in the eyes of everybody.** (Romans, 12:17)

I urge you, brothers, to watch out for those who **cause divisions and put obstacles in your way** that are contrary to the teaching [God's commandments] you have learned. Keep away from them. (Romans, 16:17)

**Watch out that you do not lose what you have worked for, but that you may be rewarded fully.** (2 John 1:8)

Tell Archippus: "**Take heed to the ministry which you have received in the Lord, that you fulfill it.**" (Colossians, 4:17)

... Therefore, holy brothers... **think carefully about Jesus whom we declare to be God's messenger and high priest.** He was faithful to the One Who appointed him, just as Moses was faithful in all God's house... See to it, brothers, **that none of you has a sinful, unbelieving heart that turns away from the living God [the Everlasting].** (Hebrews, 3:1-2, 12)

**See to it that no one misses the grace of God** and that no bitter root grows up to cause trouble and defile many. (Hebrews, 12:15)

Your eye is the lamp of your body. When your eyes are good, your whole body also is full of light. But when they are bad, your body also is full of darkness. **See to it, then, that the light within you is not darkness.** Therefore, if your whole body is full of light, and no part of it dark, it will be completely lighted, as when the light of a lamp shines on you. (Luke, 11:34-36)

Therefore **keep watch.** But understand this: If the owner of the house had known at what time of night the thief was coming, he would have kept watch and would not have let his house be broken into. **So you also must be ready,** because the son of man [Jesus] will come at an hour when you do

not expect him. (Matthew, 24:42-44)

By the grace God has given me, I laid a foundation as an expert builder, and someone else is building on it. **But each one should be careful how he builds.** For no one can lay any foundation other than the one already laid, which is Jesus Christ. If any man builds on this foundation using gold, silver, costly stones, wood, hay or straw, his work will be shown for what it is, because the Day will bring it to light. It will be revealed with fire, and the fire will test the quality of each man's work. (1 Corinthians, 3:10-13)

These things happened to them as examples and were written down as warnings for us, on whom the fulfillment of the ages has come. So, if you think **you are standing firm, be careful that you don't fall!** No temptation has seized you except what is common to man. And God is faithful; He will not let you be tempted beyond what you can bear. But when you are tempted, He will also provide a way out so that you can stand up under it. (1 Corinthians, 10:11-13)

Even from your own number men will arise and distort the truth in order to draw away disciples after them. **So be on your guard!** Remember that for three years I never stopped warning each of you night and day... "Now I commit you to God and to the word of His grace [commandments possessed of God's revelation], which can build you up and give you an inheritance among all those who are sanctified. (Acts, 20:30-32)

**Therefore keep watch,** because you do not know the day [the day of judgment] or the hour. (Matthew, 25:13)

Then he returned to his disciples and found them sleeping. "Could you men not keep watch with me for one hour?" he asked Peter. **"Watch and pray so that you will not fall into temptation.** The spirit is willing, but the body is weak." (Matthew, 26:40-41; Mark 14:37-41)

**"Consider carefully what you hear,"** he [Jesus] continued. "With the measure you use, it will be measured to you—and even more. Whoever has will be given more; whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken from him." (Mark, 4:24-25)

For there is nothing hidden that will not be disclosed, and nothing concealed that will not be known or brought out into the open. Therefore **consider carefully how you listen** [God's commandments]. Whoever has will be given more; whoever does not have, even what he thinks he has will be taken from him." (Luke, 8:17-18)

**See to it that you do not refuse him who speaks.** If they did not escape when they refused him who warned them on earth, how much less will we, if we turn away from him who [Jesus, God's Messenger] warns us from heaven? At that time His voice shook the earth, but now he has promised, "Once more I will shake not only the earth but also the heavens." The words "once more" indicate the removing of what can be shaken—that is, created things—so that what cannot be shaken may remain. Therefore, since we are receiving a kingdom that cannot be shaken, let us be thankful, and

so worship God acceptably with reverence and awe. (Hebrews, 12:25-28)

**"You must be on your guard.** You will be handed over to the local councils and flogged in the synagogues. On account of me you will stand before governors and kings as witnesses to them. And the Gospel must first be preached to all nations. Whenever you are arrested and brought to trial, do not worry beforehand about what to say. Just say whatever is given you at the time, for it is not you speaking, but God's Spirit." (Mark, 13:9-11)

"No one knows about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven, nor Jesus, but only the God. **Be on guard! Be alert!** You do not know when that time will come. It's like a man going away: He leaves his house and puts his servants in charge, each with his assigned task, and tells the one at the door to keep watch. **"Therefore keep watch** because you do not know when the owner of the house will come back—whether in the evening, or at midnight, or when the rooster crows, or at dawn. If he comes suddenly, do not let him find you sleeping. **What I say to you, I say to everyone: 'Watch!'**" (Mark, 13:32-37)

Someone in the crowd said to him, "Teacher, tell my brother to divide the inheritance with me." Jesus replied, "Man, who appointed me a judge or an arbiter between you?" Then he said to them, **"Watch out! Be on your guard** against all kinds of greed; a man's life does not consist in the abundance of his possessions." And he told them this parable: "The ground of a certain rich man produced a good crop. He thought to himself, 'What shall I do? I have no place to store my crops.' "Then he said, 'This is what I'll do. I will tear down my barns and build bigger ones, and there I will store all my grain and my goods. And I'll say to myself, "You have plenty of good things laid up for many years. Take life easy; eat, drink and be merry." "But God said to him, 'You fool! This very night your life will be demanded from you. Then who will get what you have prepared for yourself? This is how it will be with anyone who stores up things for himself but is not rich toward God.'" (Luke, 12:13-21)

"Be dressed ready for service and keep your lamps burning, like men waiting for their master to return from a wedding banquet, so that when he comes and knocks they can immediately open the door for him. It will be good for those servants whose master finds them watching when he comes. I tell you the truth, he will dress himself to serve, will have them recline at the table and will come and wait on them. **It will be good for those servants whose master finds them ready, even if he comes in the second or third watch of the night.** But understand this: If the owner of the house had known at what hour the thief was coming, he would not have let his house be broken into. You also must be ready, because the Son of Man [Jesus] will come at an hour when you do not expect him." (Luke, 12:35-40; Matthew 24:42-51; Mark 13:34-36)

## **To Be Righteous and Truthful**

They came to him and said, "Teacher, we know you are a man of integrity. **You aren't swayed by men, because you pay no attention to who they are; but you teach the way of God in**

**accordance with the truth...** (Mark, 12:14; Matthew 22:16; Luke, 20:21-22)

[Jesus:] **Whoever can be trusted with very little can also be trusted with much, and whoever is dishonest with very little will also be dishonest with much.** So if you have not been trustworthy in handling worldly wealth, who will trust you with true riches? And if you have not been trustworthy with someone else's property, who will give you property of your own? (Luke, 16:10-12)

In everything set them an example by doing what is good. **In your teaching show integrity, seriousness and soundness of speech that cannot be condemned,** so that those who oppose you may be ashamed because they have nothing bad to say about us. (Titus, 2:7-8)

**Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness,** for they will be filled. (Matthew, 5:6)

**Blessed are those who are persecuted because of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven [paradise].** (Matthew, 5:10)

[God said to Jesus:] **"You have loved righteousness** and hated wickedness..." (Hebrews, 1:9)

**You were taught, with regard to your former way of life, to put off your old self,** which is being corrupted by its deceitful desires; **to be made new in the attitude of your minds; and to put on the new self... Therefore each of you must put off falsehood and speak truthfully to his neighbor,** for we are all members of one body. "... do not sin"... and do not give the devil a foothold. (Ephesians, 4:22-27)

**But seek first His kingdom [God's approval] and His righteousness,** and all these things will be given to you as well. (Matthew, 6:33)

Tax collectors..."Teacher," they asked, "what should we do?" **"Don't collect any more than you are required to,"** he told them. Then some soldiers asked him, "And what should we do?" He replied, **"Don't extort money and don't accuse people falsely—be content with your pay."** (Luke, 3:12-14)

"Everyone who does evil hates the light, and will not come into the light for fear that his deeds will be exposed. **But whoever lives by the truth comes into the light, so that it may be seen plainly that what he has done has been done through God.**" (John, 3:20-21)

Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal body so that you obey its evil desires. Do not offer the parts of your body to sin, as instruments of wickedness, but rather offer yourselves to God, **as those who have been brought from death to life; and offer the parts of your body to him as instruments of righteousness.** For sin shall not be your master, because you are... under grace. (Romans, 6:12-14)

By faith Noah, when warned about things not yet seen, in holy fear built an ark to save his family. By his faith he... **became heir of the righteousness that comes by faith.** (Hebrews, 11:7)

Don't you know that when you offer yourselves to someone to obey him as slaves, you are slaves to the one whom you obey—whether you are slaves to sin, which leads to death, **or to obedience, which leads to righteousness?** But thanks be to God that, though you used to be slaves to sin, you wholeheartedly obeyed the form of teaching to which you were entrusted. **You have been set free from sin and have become slaves to righteousness.** (Romans, 6:16-18)

For I can testify about them that they are zealous for God, but their zeal is not based on knowledge. **Since they did not know the righteousness that comes from God and sought to establish their own, they did not submit to God's righteousness.** (Romans, 10:2-3)

Rather, as servants of God we commend ourselves in every way: in great endurance; in troubles, hardships and distresses; in beatings, imprisonments and riots; in hard work, sleepless nights and hunger; in purity, understanding, patience and kindness; in... sincere love; **in truthful speech and in the power of God; with weapons of righteousness in the right hand and in the left...** genuine, **yet regarded as impostors.** (2 Corinthians, 6:4-8)

But you, man of God, flee from all this, and pursue **righteousness**, godliness, faith, love, endurance and gentleness. Fight the good fight of the faith. Take hold of the eternal life to which you were called [faith in God] when you made your good confession in the presence of many witnesses. (1 Timothy, 6:11-12)

Flee the evil desires of youth, and **pursue righteousness**, faith, love and peace, along with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart. (2 Timothy, 2:22)

Therefore put on the full armor [the spiritual power that comes from faith in God] of God, so that when the day of evil comes, you may be able to stand your ground, and after you have done everything, to stand. **Stand firm** then, with the belt of truth buckled around your waist, **with the breastplate of righteousness in place**, and with your feet fitted with the readiness that comes from the Gospel of peace [God's commandments]. In addition to all this, take up the shield of faith, with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one. Take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the spirit, which is the word of God. (Ephesians, 6:13-17)

Now He [God] Who supplies seed to the sower and bread for food will also supply and increase your store of seed and **will enlarge the harvest of your righteousness.** (2 Corinthians, 9:10)

It is because of Him [God] that you are in Christ Jesus [you believed with Jesus] who has become for us wisdom from God—that is, [being instrumental in] our **righteousness**, holiness and redemption. (1 Corinthians, 1:30)

For you were once darkness, but now you are light in the Lord [manifested in the light of God]... **(the fruit of the light consists in all goodness, righteousness and truth)** and find out what pleases

the Lord. Have nothing to do with the fruitless deeds of darkness, but rather expose them. (Ephesians, 5:8-11)

And this is my prayer: that your love may abound more and more in knowledge and depth of insight, so that you may be able to discern what is best and may be pure and blameless... **filled with the fruit of righteousness that comes through Jesus Christ—to the glory and praise of God.** (Philippians, 1:9-11)

All Scripture is inspired by God and **is useful for** teaching, rebuking, correcting and **training in righteousness**, so that the man of God may be thoroughly equipped for every good work. (2 Timothy, 3:16-17)

God disciplines us for our good... No discipline seems pleasant at the time, but painful. Later on, however, **it produces a harvest of righteousness and peace for those who have been trained by it.** Therefore, strengthen your feeble arms and weak knees. **"Make level paths for your feet,"** so that the lame may not be disabled, but rather healed. (Hebrews, 12:11-13)

For where you have envy and selfish ambition, there you find disorder and every evil practice. But the wisdom that comes from heaven [from God] is first of all pure; then peace-loving, considerate, submissive, full of mercy and good fruit, impartial and sincere. **Peacemakers who sow in peace raise a harvest of righteousness.** (James, 3:16-18)

Who is going to harm you if you are eager to do good? **But even if you should suffer for what is right, you are blessed.** "Do not fear what they fear; do not be frightened."... Always be prepared to give an answer to everyone who asks you to give the reason for the hope that you have. But do this with gentleness and respect, keeping a clear conscience, so that those who speak maliciously against your good behavior in Christ may be ashamed of their slander. It is better, if it is God's will, to suffer for doing good than for doing evil. (1 Peter, 3:13-17)

And do not swear by your head, for you cannot make even one hair white or black. Simply let your **'Yes' be 'Yes,' and your 'No,' 'No';** anything beyond this comes from the evil one. (Matthew, 5:36-37)

Above all, my brothers, do not swear—not by heaven or by earth or by anything else. Let your **"Yes" be yes, and your "No," no**, or you will be condemned [to wrath on the day of judgment] (James, 5:12)

Do not allow what you consider good to be spoken of as evil. For the kingdom of God [the accounting in the hereafter] is not a matter of eating and drinking, **but of righteousness**, peace and joy... because anyone who serves Christ in this way is pleasing to God and approved by men. Let us therefore make every effort to do what leads to peace and to mutual edification. (Romans, 14:16-19)

## Being Affectionate and Compassionate

**Blessed are the merciful**, for they will be shown mercy. (Matthew, 5:7)

**Be merciful to those who doubt; snatch others from the fire and save them; to others show mercy, mixed with fear**—hating even the clothing stained by corrupted flesh. (Jude, 1:22-23)

Flee the evil desires of youth, and pursue righteousness, faith, love and peace, along with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart. Don't have anything to do with foolish and stupid arguments, because you know they produce quarrels. And the Lord's servant must not quarrel; **instead, he must be kind to everyone, able to teach, not resentful. Those who oppose him he must gently instruct, in the hope that God will grant them repentance leading them to a knowledge of the truth**, and that they will come to their senses and escape from the trap of the devil, who has taken them captive to do his will. (2 Timothy, 2:22-26)

**If anyone has material possessions and sees his brother in need but has no pity on him, how can the love of God be in him?** Dear children, let us not love with words or tongue but with actions and in truth. (1 John, 3:17-18)

**... If it is showing mercy, let him do it cheerfully.** (Romans, 12:8)

And as for you, brothers, never tire of doing what is right. If anyone does not obey our instruction in this letter, take special note of him. Do not associate with him, in order that he may feel ashamed. **Yet do not regard him as an enemy, but warn him as a brother.** (2 Thessalonians, 3:13-15)

Woe to you... you hypocrites! You give a tenth of your spices—mint, dill and cummin. **But you have neglected** the more important matters of the law [God's commandments]—justice, **mercy** and faithfulness. You should have practiced the latter, without neglecting the former. (Matthew, 23:23)

[Jesus:] "While I was with them, I protected them and kept them safe..." (John, 17:12)

As Jesus was getting into the boat, the man who had been demon-possessed begged to go with him. Jesus did not let him, but said, "**Go home to your family and tell them how much the Lord has done for you, and how He has had mercy on you.**" (Mark, 5:18-19)

**... But the wisdom that comes from heaven** is first of all pure; then peace-loving, considerate, submissive, **full of mercy and good fruit**, impartial and sincere. Peacemakers who sow in peace raise a harvest of righteousness. (James, 3:17-18)

**... But the fruit of God's Spirit** [the spirit of faith in God] is love, joy, peace, patience, **kindness**, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness and self-control. Against such things there is no law. (Galatians, 5:22-23)

You know we never used flattery, nor did we put on a mask to cover up greed—God is our witness.

We were not looking for praise from men, not from you or anyone else. As apostles of Christ we could have been a burden to you, **but we were gentle among you, like a mother caring for her little children.** We loved you so much that we were delighted to share with you not only the Gospel of God but our lives as well [for God's approval], because you had become so dear to us. Surely you remember, brothers, our toil and hardship; we worked night and day in order not to be a burden to anyone while we preached the Gospel of God to you. You are witnesses, and so is God, of how holy, righteous and blameless we were among you who believed. (1 Thessalonians, 2:5-10)

[Jesus:] **"But love your enemies,** do good to them, and lend to them without expecting to get anything back. Then your reward will be great... because He [God] is kind to the ungrateful and wicked. **Be merciful,** just as your God is merciful." (Luke, 6:35-36)

## Being Forgiving

"But I tell you who hear me: **Love your enemies, do good to those who hate you, bless those who curse you, pray for those who mistreat you.**" (Luke, 6:27-28)

And when you stand praying, **if you hold anything against anyone, forgive him...** (Mark, 11:25-26)

**For if you forgive men when they sin against you, your God will also forgive you.** (Matthew, 6:14)

"Do not judge, and you will not be judged. Do not condemn, and you will not be condemned. **Forgive, and you will be forgiven.** Give, and it will be given to you. A good measure, pressed down, shaken together and running over, will be poured into your lap. For with the measure you use, it will be measured to you." (Luke, 6:37-38)

You have heard that it was said, 'Eye for eye, and tooth for tooth.' But I tell you, Do not resist an evil person. **If someone strikes you on the right cheek, turn to him the other also. And if someone wants to sue you and take your tunic, let him have your cloak as well. If someone forces you to go one mile, go with him two miles.** (Matthew, 5:38-41)

Therefore, as God's chosen people, holy and dearly loved, clothe yourselves with compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness and patience. **Bear with each other and forgive whatever grievances you may have against one another. Forgive as the Lord forgave you.** And over all these virtues put on love, which binds them all together in perfect unity. (Colossians 3:12-14)

So watch yourselves. **"If your brother sins, rebuke him, and if he repents, forgive him.** If he sins against you seven times in a day, and seven times comes back to you and says, 'I repent,' **forgive him.**" (Luke, 17:3-4)



Then Peter came to Jesus and asked, "... **How many times shall I forgive my brother when he sins against me? Up to seven times?**" Jesus answered, "I tell you, not seven times, but **seventy-seven times**. (Matthew, 18:21-22)

He [Jesus:] said to them, "When you pray, say: '**[Our Lord]... Forgive us our sins, for we also forgive everyone who sins against us**. And lead us not into temptation.'" (Luke, 11:2-4)

**Forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors**. And lead us not into temptation but deliver us from the evil one. (Matthew, 6:12-13)

"You have heard that it was said, 'Love your neighbor and hate your enemy.' But I tell you: **Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you**... He [God] causes His sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous. If you love those who love you, what reward will you get?..." (Matthew, 5:43-46)

## Being Meek and Gentle

**Blessed are the meek, for they will inherit the earth**. (Matthew, 5:5)

Instead, it should be that of your inner self, **the unfading beauty of a gentle and quiet spirit**, which is of great worth in God's Sight. (1 Peter, 3:4)

**And the Lord's servant must not quarrel**; instead, he must be kind to everyone, able to teach, not resentful. **Those who oppose him he must gently instruct**, in the hope that God will grant them repentance leading them to a knowledge of the truth, and that they will come to their senses and escape from the trap of the devil, who has taken them captive to do his will. (2 Timothy, 2:24-26)

Brothers, if someone is caught in a sin, **you who are spiritual should restore him gently**. But watch yourself, or you also may be tempted. Carry each other's burdens, and in this way you will fulfill the law of Christ [God's commandments revealed to Jesus]. (Galatians, 6:1-2)

Remind the people to be subject to rulers and authorities, **to be obedient, to be ready to do whatever is good**, to slander no one, to be peaceable and considerate, and to show true humility toward all men. (Titus, 3:1-2)

[Jesus:] "Come to me, all you who are weary and burdened, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you and learn from me, **for I am gentle and humble in heart**, and you will find rest for your souls." (Matthew, 11:28-29)

... But in your hearts... Always be prepared to give an answer to everyone who asks you to give the reason for the hope that you have. **But do this with gentleness and respect**, keeping a clear conscience, so that those who speak maliciously against your good behavior in Christ [by following Jesus] may be ashamed of their slander. (1 Peter, 3:15-16)

But the wisdom that comes from heaven [from God's Presence] is first of all pure; then **peace-loving, considerate, submissive**, full of mercy and good fruit, without partiality, and without hypocrisy. (James, 3:17)

Get rid of all bitterness, rage and anger, brawling and slander, along with every form of malice. **Be kind and compassionate to one another**, forgiving each other, just as... God forgave you. (Ephesians, 4:31-32)

Now we ask you, brothers, to respect those who work hard among you, who are over you in the Lord and who admonish you. Hold them in the highest regard in love because of their work. **Live in peace with each other**... brothers, warn those who are idle, encourage the timid, help the weak, be patient with everyone. **Make sure that nobody pays back wrong for wrong, but always try to be kind to each other and to everyone else.** Be joyful always. (1 Thessalonians, 5:12-16)

But the fruit of the Spirit of God is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, **gentleness** and self-control. Against such things there is no law. (Galatians, 5:22-23)

... I urge you to live a life worthy of the calling [according to the revelation you receive from God] you have received. **Be completely humble and gentle; be patient, bearing with one another in love.** (Ephesians, 4:1-2)

Now the overseer must be above reproach... temperate, self-controlled, respectable, hospitable, able to teach, not given to drunkenness, not violent but **gentle, not quarrelsome**, not a lover of money. (1 Timothy, 3:2-3)

## Overcoming Anger

**Get rid of all bitterness, rage and anger**, brawling and slander, along with every form of malice. Be kind and compassionate to one another, forgiving each other, just as... God forgave you. (Ephesians, 4:31-32)

My dear brothers, take note of this: Everyone should be quick to listen, **slow to become angry, for man's anger does not bring about the righteous life that God desires.** Therefore, get rid of all moral filth and the evil that is so prevalent and humbly accept the Word [God's commandments] planted in you, which can save you. (James, 1:19-21)

But I tell you that anyone **who is angry with his brother will be subject to judgment**... (Matthew, 5:22)

**But now you must rid yourselves of all such things as these: anger, rage**, malice, slander, and filthy language from your lips. Do not lie to each other, since you have taken off your old self with its practices... (Colossians, 3:8-10)

## Being Trustworthy

**Whoever can be trusted with very little can also be trusted with much,** and whoever is dishonest with very little will also be dishonest with much. So if you have not been trustworthy in handling worldly wealth, who will trust you with true riches? And if you have not been trustworthy with someone else's property, who will give you property of your own? (Luke, 16:10-12)

So then, men ought to regard us as servants of Christ [for God's approval] and as those entrusted with the secret things of God. Now it is required that those who have been **given a trust must prove faithful.** (1 Corinthians, 4:1-2)

... I have no command from the Lord, **but I give a judgment as one who by the Lord's mercy is trustworthy.** (1 Corinthians, 7:25)

... **He [Jesus] considered me faithful, appointing me to his service.** Even though I was once a blasphemer and a persecutor and a violent man, I was shown mercy because I acted in ignorance and unbelief. (1 Timothy, 1:12-13)

In the same way, their wives are to be women worthy of respect, not malicious talkers but temperate and **trustworthy in everything.** (1 Timothy, 3:11)

... And the things you have heard me say in the presence of many witnesses **entrust to reliable men who will also be qualified to teach others.** Endure hardship with us like a good soldier [student, follower] of Christ Jesus. (2 Timothy, 2:1-3)

... **To the holy and faithful** brothers... Grace and peace to you from God... (Colossians, 1:1-2)

You learned it [God's commandments] from Epaphras, our dear fellow servant, who is a **faithful minister of Christ** on our behalf... (Colossians, 1:7-8)

Tychicus will tell you all the news about me. **He is a dear brother, a faithful minister** and fellow servant in the Lord. I am sending him to you for the express purpose that you may know about our circumstances and that he may encourage your hearts. He is coming with Onesimus, **our faithful and dear brother, who is one of you.** They will tell you everything that is happening here. (Colossians, 4:7-9)

Tychicus, the **dear brother and faithful servant in the Lord,** will tell you everything, so that you also may know how I am and what I am doing. I am sending him to you for this very purpose, that you may know how we are, and that he may encourage you. (Ephesians, 6:21-22)

With the help of Silas, **whom I regard as a faithful brother,** I have written to you briefly, encouraging you and testifying that this is the true grace of God. Stand fast in it... Greet one another with a kiss of love. Peace to all of you [to those who follow Jesus for God's sake] who are in Christ. (1 Peter, 5:12-14)

**Who then is the faithful and wise servant**, whom the master has put in charge of the servants in his household to give them their food at the proper time? It will be good for that servant whose master finds him doing so when he returns. I tell you the truth, he will put him in charge of all his possessions. (Matthew, 24:45-47; Luke 12:42-44)

"His master replied, 'Well done, good and **faithful** servant! **You have been faithful with a few things; I will put you in charge of many things.** Come and share your master's happiness!" (Matthew, 25:21; Luke, 19:17)

Teach slaves to be subject to their masters in everything, to try to please them, not to talk back to them, and not to steal from them, **but to show that they can be fully trusted**, so that in every way they will make the teaching about God attractive. For the grace of God that brings salvation has appeared to all men. It teaches us to say "No" to ungodliness and worldly passions, and to live self-controlled, upright and godly lives in this present age... (Titus, 2:9-13)

## Having Fortitude

**For it is commendable if a man bears up under the pain of unjust suffering because he is conscious of God... But if you suffer for doing good and you endure it, this is commendable before God.** (1 Peter, 2:19-20)

**You too, be patient** and stand firm... Don't grumble against each other, brothers... Brothers, as an example of patience in the face of suffering, **take the prophets who spoke in the name of the Lord. As you know, we consider blessed those who have persevered. You have heard of Job's perseverance and have seen what the Lord finally brought about.** The Lord is full of compassion and mercy. (James, 5:8-11)

And the Lord's servant must not be quarrelsome but kind to everyone, able to teach, **patiently enduring evil** ... (2 Timothy, 2:24)

But you, man of God, flee from all this, and **pursue** righteousness, godliness, faith, love, **endurance** and gentleness. (1 Timothy, 6:11)

And so **after waiting patiently, Abraham received what was promised.** (Hebrews, 6:15)

Be completely humble and gentle; **be patient**, bearing with one another in love. (Ephesians, 4:2)

... And we urge you, brothers, warn those who are idle, encourage the timid, help the weak, **be patient with everyone.** Make sure that nobody pays back wrong for wrong, but always try to be kind to each other and to everyone else. (1 Thessalonians, 5:14-15)

... Being strengthened with all power according to His [God's] glorious might so that **you may have great endurance and patience, and joyfully.** (Colossians, 1:11)

... so that through them you may participate in the divine nature and escape the corruption in the world caused by evil desires. For this very reason, **make every effort to add to your faith** goodness; and to goodness, knowledge; and to knowledge, **self-control; and to self-control, perseverance; and to perseverance, godliness; and to godliness**, brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness, love. For if you possess these qualities in increasing measure, they will keep you from being ineffective and unproductive in your knowledge of... Jesus Christ... (2 Peter, 1:4-8)

[Jesus:] "Brother will betray brother to death, and a father his child; children will rebel against their parents and have them put to death. All men will hate you because of me [because you follow me for the approval of God], **but he who stands firm to the end will be saved.**" (Matthew, 10:21-22; Mark, 13:12-13)

[Jesus:] "At that time many will turn away from the faith and will betray and hate each other, and many false prophets will appear and deceive many people. Because of the increase of wickedness, the love of most will grow cold, **but he who stands firm to the end will be saved.**" (Matthew, 24:10-13)

You, however, know all about my teaching, my way of life, my purpose, faith, patience, love, endurance, **persecutions, sufferings—what kinds of things happened** to me in Antioch, Iconium and Lystra, the persecutions I endured. **Yet the Lord rescued me from all of them.** In fact, everyone who wants to live a godly life... will be persecuted, while evil men and impostors will go from bad to worse, deceiving and being deceived. (2 Timothy, 3:10-13)

Never be lacking in zeal... serving the Lord. Be joyful in hope, **patient in affliction**, faithful in prayer. (Romans, 12:11-12)

Endure hardship with us like a good soldier [student, follower] of Christ Jesus... Reflect on what I am saying, for the Lord will give you insight into all this. This is my Gospel, **for which I am suffering even to the point of being chained like a criminal.** But God's word is not chained. Therefore I endure everything for the sake of the elect [servants chosen by God], that they too may obtain the salvation... (2 Timothy, 2:3, 7-10)

But the seed on good soil stands for those with a noble and good heart, who hear the word, **retain it, and by persevering produce a crop.** (Luke, 8:15)

[Jesus:] "You are those **who have stood by me in my trials.** (Luke, 22:28)

I know your deeds, your hard work and **your perseverance.** I know that you cannot tolerate [dislike] wicked men, that you have tested those who claim to be apostles but are not, and have found them false. **You have persevered** and have endured hardships **[for the approval of God]... and have not grown weary.** (Revelation, 2:2-3)

Therefore, my dear brothers, **stand firm. Let nothing move you. Always give yourselves fully to the work of the Lord**, because you know that your labor in the Lord is not in vain. (1 Corinthians,

15:58)

## Avoiding Envy

Love is patient, love is kind. **It does not envy**, it does not boast, it is not proud. (1 Corinthians, 13:4)

Since we live by the God... **Let us not** become conceited, provoking and **envying each other**. (Galatians, 5:25-26)

He went on: "What comes out of a man is what makes him 'unclean.' For from within, out of men's hearts, come evil thoughts, sexual immorality, theft, murder, adultery, greed, malice, deceit, lewdness, **envy**, slander, arrogance and folly. **All these evils come from inside [from lower self] and make a man 'unclean.'**" (Mark, 7:20-23)

The acts of the sinful nature [lower self] are obvious: sexual immorality, impurity and debauchery; idolatry and witchcraft; hatred, discord, jealousy, fits of rage, **selfish ambition**, dissensions, factions and **envy**; drunkenness, orgies, and the like. (Galatians, 5:19-21)

Therefore, **rid yourselves of** all malice and all deceit, hypocrisy, **envy**, and slander of every kind. Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may grow up in your salvation, now that you have tasted that the Lord is good. (1 Peter, 2:1-3)

You are still worldly. **For since there is jealousy and quarreling among you, are you not worldly? Are you not acting like mere men?** (1 Corinthians, 3:3)

You lust and do not have; so you commit murder. **You are envious** and cannot obtain; so you fight and quarrel. **You do not have because you do not ask.** (James, 4:2)

Who is wise and understanding among you? Let him show it by his good life, by deeds done in the humility that comes from wisdom. **But if you harbor bitter envy and selfish ambition in your hearts, do not boast about it** or deny the truth. Such "wisdom" does not come down from heaven but is earthly, unspiritual, of the devil. **For where you have envy and selfish ambition, there you find disorder and every evil practice.** But the wisdom that comes from heaven [from God] is first of all pure; then peace-loving, considerate, submissive, full of mercy and good fruit, impartial and sincere. Peacemakers who sow in peace raise a harvest of righteousness. (James, 3:13-18)

Furthermore, since they did not think it worthwhile to retain the knowledge of God, He gave them over to a depraved mind, to do what ought not to be done. They have become filled with every kind of wickedness, evil, greed and depravity. They are full of **envy**, murder, strife, deceit and malice. They are gossips, slanderers, hateful to God [God is beyond this], insolent, arrogant and boastful; they invent ways of doing evil; they disobey their parents; they are senseless, faithless, heartless, ruthless. **Although they know God's righteous decree that those who do such things deserve death [the torment of hell], they not only continue to do these very things but**

**also approve of those who practice them.** (Romans, 1:28-32)

The night is nearly over; the day is almost here. So let us put aside the deeds of darkness and put on the armor of light. Let us behave decently, as in the daytime, not drunkenness, not in sexual immorality and debauchery, not in dissension and **jealousy**. Rather, clothe yourselves with the Lord... and do not think about how to gratify the desires of the sinful nature. (Romans, 13:12-14)

... **I fear that there may be quarreling, jealousy**, outbursts of anger, factions, slander, gossip, arrogance and disorder. (2 Corinthians, 12:20)

## To Be Peace-Loving

Do not repay anyone evil for evil. Be careful to do what is right in the eyes of everybody. **If it is possible, as far as it depends on you, live at peace with everyone.** (Romans, 12:17-18)

**Blessed are the peacemakers!**... (Matthew, 5:9)

**Make every effort to live in peace** with all men and to be holy without holiness no one will see the Lord. [Referring to devout believers seeing the manifestation of the Presence of Almighty God, as a blessing of heaven.] See to it that no one misses the grace of God... (Hebrews, 12:14-15)

Therefore, if you are offering your gift at the altar and there remember that your brother has something against you, leave your gift there in front of the altar. **First go and be reconciled to your brother**; then come and offer your gift. **Settle matters quickly with your adversary who is taking you to court...** (Matthew, 5:23-25)

Salt is good, but if it loses its saltiness, how can you make it salty again? Have salt in yourselves, **and be at peace with each other.** (Mark, 9:50)

But if the unbeliever leaves, let him do so. A believing man or woman is not bound in such circumstances; **God has called us to live in peace.** (1 Corinthians, 7:15)

Now we ask you, brothers, to respect those who work hard among you, who are over you in the Lord and who admonish you. Hold them in the highest regard in love because of their work. **Live in peace with each other.** (1 Thessalonians, 5:12-13)

**But the wisdom that comes from heaven [in the Sight of God] is first of all pure; then peace-loving**, considerate, submissive, full of mercy and good fruit, impartial and sincere, without a trace of partiality or hypocrisy. **And a harvest of righteousness is grown from the seed of peace planted by peacemakers.** (James, 3:17-18)

So then, dear friends, since you are looking forward to this, make every effort to be found spotless, blameless **and at peace with Him.** (2 Peter, 3:14)

## To Be Loyal

Woe to you...! You give a tenth of your spices—mint, dill and cummin. But **you have neglected** the more important matters of the law [God's commandments] —justice, mercy and **faithfulness**. **You should have practiced the latter, without neglecting the former.** (Matthew, 23:23)

For this reason I am sending to you Timothy, **my son whom I love, who is faithful in the Lord**. He will remind you of my way of life in Christ Jesus [for the approval of God], which agrees with what I teach everywhere in every church. (1 Corinthians, 4:17)

... To the saints in Ephesus, **the faithful in Christ Jesus [for the approval of God]**: Grace and peace to you from God... (Ephesians, 1:1-2)

**He [Jesus] was faithful to the One [God] Who appointed him, just as Moses was faithful in all God...** (Hebrews, 3:2)

**Moses was faithful as a servant in all God...** testifying to what would be said in the future. (Hebrews, 3:5)

Do not be afraid of what you are about to suffer. I tell you, the devil will put some of you in prison to test you, and you will suffer persecution for ten days. **Be faithful, even to the point of death**, and I will give you the crown of life [paradise]. (Revelation, 2:10)

... **And with him [Jesus]** will be his called, chosen and **faithful [for the approval of God] followers**. (Revelation, 17:14)

To the Jews who had believed him, Jesus said, "**If you hold to my teaching, you are really my disciples**. Then you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free." (John, 8:31-32)

... When he [Barnaba] arrived and saw the evidence of the grace of God, he was glad and **encouraged them all to remain true to the Lord with all their hearts**. He was a good man, full of... faith, and a great number of people were brought to the Lord. (Acts, 11:23-24)

## To Help Others

Nobody should seek his own good, **but the good of others**. (1 Corinthians, 10 10:24)

He [Jesus:] "... **Freely you have received, freely give.**" (Matthew, 10:8)

The poor you will always have with you, and **you can help them any time you want**. (Mark, 14:7)

**Share with God's people [the ones who devote themselves to God] who are in need**. Practice hospitality. (Romans, 12:13)

You yourselves know that these hands of mine have supplied **my own needs and the needs of my companions**. In everything I did, I showed you that by this kind of hard work **we must help the**



**weak, remembering the words... Jesus himself said: 'It is more blessed to give than to receive.'** (Acts, 20:34-35)

But if a widow has children or grandchildren, **these should learn first of all to put their religion into practice by caring for their own family and so repaying their parents and grandparents**, for this is pleasing to God. (1 Timothy, 5:4)

At Caesarea there was a man named Cornelius, a centurion in what was known as the Italian Regiment. He and all his family were devout and God-fearing; **he gave generously to those in need and prayed to God regularly.** (Acts, 10:1-2)

Dear friend, you are faithful in what you are doing for the brothers, even though they are strangers to you. They have told the church about your love. **You will do well to send them on their way in a manner worthy of God.** For they went out for the sake of the Name [for the approval of God], accepting nothing from the Gentiles. **We ought therefore to show hospitality to such men so that we may work together for the truth.** (3 John, 1:5-8)

... Mary [called Magdalene] from whom seven demons had come out; Joanna the wife of Cuza, the manager of Herod's household; Susanna; and many others. **These women were contributing from their own resources to support Jesus and his disciples.** (Luke, 8:2-3)

In Joppa there was a disciple named Tabitha [which, when translated in Greek, is called Dorcas], **who was always doing good and helping the poor.** (Acts, 9:36)

When Apollos wanted to go to Achaia, the brothers encouraged him and wrote to the disciples there to welcome him. **On his arrival he greatly helped those who, through God's grace, had believed.** (Acts, 18:27)

If any woman who is a believer **has widows in her family, she should help them** and not let the church be burdened with them, so that the church can **help those widows who are really in need.** (1 Timothy, 5:16)

Moreover, as you Philippians know, in the early days of your acquaintance with the Gospel, when I set out from Macedonia, **not one church shared with me in the matter of giving and receiving, except you only;** for even when I was in Thessalonica, **you sent me aid again and again when I was in need.** (Philippinas 4:15-16)

Only Luke is with me. Get Mark and bring him with you, **because he is helpful to me in my ministry.** (2 Timothy, 4:11)

... I ask you... **to give her any help she may need from you,** for she has been a great help [for the approval of God] to many people, including me. (Romans, 16:2)

So they signaled their partners in the other boat to come and **help them, and they came** and filled both boats so full that they began to sink. (Luke, 5:7)

# The Importance of the Good Sense and Wisdom Imparted in the Gospel

**Love** the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all **your mind** and with all your strength. (Mark, 12:30; Luke 10:27)

For in my inner being I delight in God's law; **the law of my mind**... Thanks be to God...! **So then, I myself serve the law of God with my mind**... (Romans, 7:22, 25)

Be very careful, then, how you live—**not as unwise but as wise**. (Ephesians, 5:15)

For this reason, since the day we heard about you, we have not stopped praying for you and asking God to fill you with the knowledge of **His will through all spiritual wisdom and understanding**. (Colossians, 1:9)

And the child [Jesus] grew and became strong; **he was filled with wisdom**, and the grace of God was upon him. (Luke, 2:40)

**And Jesus grew in wisdom** and stature, **and in favor with God and men**. (Luke, 2:52)

**If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, Who gives generously to all**... and it will be given to him. (James, 1:5)

**But the wisdom** that comes from heaven **[from the Sight of God] is first of all pure; then peace-loving, considerate**, submissive, full of mercy and good fruit... (James, 3:17)

... Paul replied. "What I am saying is true **and reasonable**." (Acts, 26:25)

Aware of their discussion, Jesus asked them: "Why are you talking about having no bread? **Do you still not see or understand? Are your hearts hardened?** Do you have eyes but fail to see, and ears but fail to hear? And don't you remember? When I broke the five loaves for the five thousand, how many basketfuls of pieces did you pick up?" "Twelve," they replied. "And when I broke the seven loaves for the four thousand, how many basketfuls of pieces did you pick up?" They answered, "Seven." **He said to them, "Do you still not understand?"** (Mark, 8:17-21)

Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly as you **teach and admonish one another with all wisdom**, and as you sing psalms, hymns and spiritual songs with gratitude in your hearts to God. (Colossians, 3:16)

None of them could stand against the **wisdom... with which Stephen spoke**.. (Acts, 6:10)

... I keep asking that God... **may give you the spirit of wisdom**... so that you may know Him better. (Ephesians, 1:17)

But these men blaspheme in matters they do not understand. **They are like brute beasts, creatures of instinct**, born only to be caught and destroyed, and like beasts they too will perish. (2 Peter, 2:12)

Yet these men speak abusively against whatever they do not understand; and what things they do understand by instinct, **like unreasoning animals**—these are the very things that destroy them. (Jude, 1:10)

**Who is wise and understanding among you? Let him show it by his good life, by deeds done in the humility that comes from wisdom.** (James, 3:13)

So the Twelve gathered all the disciples together and said, "It would not be right for us to neglect the ministry of the word of God in order to wait on tables. Brothers, choose seven men from among you **who are known to be full of... wisdom**. We will turn this responsibility over to them and will give our attention to prayer and the ministry of the word." (Acts, 6:2-4)

Because the patriarchs were jealous of Joseph, they sold him as a slave into Egypt. But God was with him and rescued him from all his troubles. **He gave Joseph wisdom** and enabled him to gain the goodwill of Pharaoh king of Egypt; so He made him ruler over Egypt and all his palace. (Acts, 7:9-10)

My purpose is that they may be encouraged in heart and united in love, **so that they may have the full riches of complete understanding**, in order that they may know... namely, Christ, **in whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge**. I tell you this so that no one may deceive you by fine-sounding arguments. (Colossians, 2:2-4)

# IMPORTANCE OF PRAISING GOD AND SAYING GOOD WORDS AS MENTIONED IN THE GOSPEL

## Praising God

When he [Jesus] came near the place where the road goes down the Mount of Olives, the whole crowd of **disciples began joyfully to praise God in loud voices for all the miracles they had seen.** (Luke, 19:37)

Immediately he received his sight and **followed Jesus, praising God.** When all the people saw it, **they also praised God.** (Luke, 18:43)

**And they stayed continually at the temple, praising God.** (Luke, 24:53)

**Every day they continued to meet together in the temple courts.** They broke bread in their homes and ate together with glad and sincere hearts, **praising God.** (Acts, 2:46)

The shepherds returned, **glorifying and praising God for all the things they had heard and seen,** which were just as they had been told. (Luke, 2:20)

... **He [Zachariah] began to speak, praising God.** (Luke, 1:64)

**With the tongue we praise our Lord...** (James, 3:9)

... The Gentiles **may glorify God for His Mercy,** as it is written: "**Therefore I will praise You** among the Gentiles; **I will sing hymns to Your Name.**" Again, it says, "Rejoice, O Gentiles, with His people." And again, "**Praise the Lord, all you Gentiles, and sing praises to Him, all you peoples.**" (Romans, 15:9-11)

And there was a woman who had had a disabling spirit for eighteen years. She was bent over and could not fully straighten herself. When Jesus saw her, he called her over and said to her, "woman, you are freed from your disability." And he laid his hands on her, and immediately she straightened up and **praised God.** (Luke, 13:11-13)

One of them, when he saw he was healed, came back, **praising God in a loud voice.** (Luke, 17:15)

When the crowd saw this, they were filled with awe; **and they praised God, Who had given such**

**authority to men.** (Matthew, 9:8)

For they heard them **speaking in tongues and praising God.** (Acts, 10:46)

Immediately he stood up in front of them, took what he had been lying on and **went home praising God.** Everyone was amazed and **gave praise to God.** They were filled with awe and said, "We have seen remarkable things today." (Luke, 5:25-26)

**They were all filled with awe and praised God.** "A great prophet has appeared among us," they said... (Luke, 7:16)

And Mary said: "**My soul glorifies the Lord...** for He has been mindful of the humble state of His servant. From now on all generations will call me blessed, for the Mighty One has done great things for me—holy is His name. His Mercy extends to those who fear Him, from generation to generation. (Luke, 1:46-50)

His father Zechariah... : "**Praise be to the Lord...** because He has... redeemed His people." (Luke, 1:67-68)

When they heard this, they had no further objections and **praised God...** (Acts, 11:18)

The centurion, seeing what had happened, **praised God** and said, "Surely this was a righteous man." (Luke, 23:47)

... **so that with one heart and mouth you may glorify the God...** Accept one another, then, just as Christ accepted you, in order to bring praise to God. (Romans, 15:6-7)

After further threats they let them go. They could not decide how to punish them, **because all the people were praising God for what had happened.** (Acts, 4:21)

He [Jesus] says, "**I will declare Your Name to my brothers; in the presence** of the congregation I will sing Your praises." (Hebrews, 2:12)

Yet he did not waver through unbelief regarding the promise of God, but was strengthened in his faith and **gave glory to God.** (Romans, 4:20)

**When they heard this, they praised God.** Then they said to Paul: "You see, brother, how many thousands of Jews have believed, and all of them are zealous for the law [God's commandments]." (Acts, 21:20)

However, if you suffer as a Christian, do not be ashamed, but **praise God** that you bear that name. (1 Peter, 4:16)

He said in a loud voice, "Fear God **and give Him glory,** because the hour of His judgment has come. Worship Him Who made the heavens, the earth, the sea and the springs of water." (Revelation, 14:7)

He got up, took his mat and walked out in full view of them all. This amazed everyone and **they**

**praised God, saying, "We have never seen anything like this!"** (Mark, 2:12)

... **Praising God and saying, "Glory to God in the highest,** and on earth peace to men on whom His favor rests." (Luke, 2:13-14)

... Simeon took him in his arms and **praised God...** (Luke, 2:28)

He jumped to his feet and began to walk. Then he went with them into the temple courts, walking and jumping, **and praising God. When all the people saw him walking and praising God,** they recognized him as the same man who used to sit begging... and they were filled with wonder and amazement at what had happened to him. (Acts, 3:8-10)

What is more, he was chosen by the churches to accompany us as we carry the offering, which we administer in order to **honor the Lord** himself and to show our eagerness to help. (2 Corinthians, 8:19)

Because of the service by which you have proved yourselves, **men will praise God for the obedience that accompanies your confession of the Gospel of Christ,** and for your generosity in sharing with them and with everyone else. (2 Corinthians 9:13)

The people were amazed when they saw the mute speaking, the crippled made well, the lame walking and the blind seeing. **And they praised the God...** (Matthew, 15:31)

At that very hour there was a severe earthquake and a tenth of the city collapsed. Seven thousand people were killed in the earthquake, and the survivors were terrified and **gave glory to the God...** (Revelation, 11:13)

About midnight Paul and Silas were **praying and singing hymns to God** [to praise Him], and the other prisoners were listening to them. (Acts, 16:25)

## **Abstaining from Evil Language and Speaking with Good Words**

**Do not let any unwholesome talk come out of your mouths,** but only what is helpful for building others up according to their needs, that it may benefit those who listen. (Ephesians, 4:29)

**Let your conversation be always full of grace, seasoned with salt,** so that you may know how to answer everyone. (Colossians, 4:6)

All spoke well of him [Jesus] and **were amazed at the gracious words that came from his lips...** (Luke, 4:22)

Finally, all of you, live in harmony with one another; be sympathetic, love as brothers, be compassionate and humble. **Do not repay evil with evil or insult with insult, but with blessing,** because to this you were called so that you may inherit a blessing. (1 Peter, 3:8-9)

... For, **"Whoever would love life and see good days must keep his tongue from evil and his lips from deceitful speech.** He must turn from evil and do good; he must seek peace and pursue it. For the eyes of the Lord are [God's help is] on the righteous but... **Lord is against those who do evil.**" (1 Peter, 3:10-12)

**But now you must rid yourselves of all such things as these: anger, rage, malice, slander, and filthy language from your lips.** (Colossians, 3:8)

If anyone considers himself religious and **yet does not keep a tight rein on his tongue, he deceives himself...** (James, 1:26)

But I tell you that anyone who is angry with his brother will be subject to judgment. **Again, whoever insults his brother will be liable to the council; and whoever says, 'You fool!' will be liable to the hell of fire...** (Matthew, 5:22)

For by your words you will be acquitted, **and by your words you will be condemned [in the hereafter].** (Matthew, 12:37)

... We speak as men approved by God to be entrusted with the Gospel. **We are not trying to please men but God, who tests our hearts.** (1 Thessalonians, 2:3-4)

**Don't grumble against each other, brothers...** (James, 5:9)

With the tongue we praise our Lord... and with it we curse men... Out of the same mouth come praise and cursing. **My brothers, this should not be. Can both fresh water and salt water flow from the same spring?** My brothers, can a fig tree bear olives, or a grapevine bear figs? Neither can a salt spring produce fresh water. (James, 3:8-12)

But **these men blaspheme in matters they do not understand.** They are like brute beasts, creatures of instinct, born only to be caught and destroyed, and like beasts they too will perish. (2 Peter, 2:12)

**Yet these men speak abusively against whatever they do not understand;** and what things they do understand by instinct, like unreasoning animals—these are the very things that destroy them. (Jude, 1:10)

Or take ships as an example. Although they are so large and are driven by strong winds, they are steered by a very small rudder wherever the pilot wants to go. Likewise the tongue is a small part of the body, but it makes great boasts. Consider what a great forest is set on fire by a small spark. **The tongue also is a fire [when it is not used in compliance with the approval of God], a world of evil among the parts of the body. It corrupts the whole person...** (James, 3:4-6)

... **If anyone is never at fault in what he says, he is a perfect man, able to keep his whole body in check.** When we put bits into the mouths of horses to make them obey us, we can turn the whole animal. (James, 3:2-3)

The brothers at Lystra and Iconium **spoke well of him.** (Acts, 16:2)

**The people** read it and **were glad for its encouraging message.** (Acts, 15:31)

Likewise every good tree bears good fruit, but **a bad tree bears bad fruit.** A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, and a bad tree cannot bear good fruit. (Matthew, 7:17-18)

In their greed these teachers **will exploit you with stories they have made up.** Their condemnation has long been hanging over them, and their destruction has not been sleeping. (2 Peter, 2:3)

Jesus called the crowd to him and said, "Listen and understand. What goes into a man's mouth does not make him 'unclean,' **but what comes out of his mouth, that is what makes him 'unclean.'** "... **The things that come out of the mouth come from the heart,** and these make a man 'unclean.' For out of the [unclean] heart come **evil thoughts,** murder, adultery, sexual immorality, **theft, false testimony, slander. These are what make a man 'unclean'...** (Matthew, 15:10-20)

**... For out of the overflow of the heart the mouth speaks.** (Matthew, 12:34)

## **Abstaining from Disputative Language**

Flee the evil desires of youth, and pursue righteousness, faith, love and peace, along with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart. **Don't have anything to do with foolish and stupid arguments, because you know they produce quarrels.** And the Lord's servant must not quarrel; instead, he must be kind to everyone, able to teach, not resentful. Those who oppose him he must gently instruct, in the hope that God will grant them repentance leading them to a knowledge of the truth. (2 Timothy, 2:22-25)

**But avoid foolish controversies and genealogies and arguments and quarrels about the law [God's commandments], because these [arguments and controversies] are unprofitable and useless.** Warn a divisive person once, and then warn him a second time. After that, have nothing to do with him. You may be sure that such a man is warped and sinful... (Titus, 3:9-11)

Let us behave decently, as in the daytime... **not in dissension and jealousy.** (Romans, 13:13)

**Aware of their discussion,** Jesus asked them: "**Why are you arguing about** having no bread? **Don't you know or understand even yet?** Are your hearts too hard to take it in? Do you have eyes but fail to see, and ears but fail to hear? And don't you remember? When I broke the five loaves for the five thousand, how many basketfuls of pieces did you pick up?" "Twelve," they replied. (Mark, 8:17-19; Matthew 16:8-11)

... When he [Jesus] was in the house, he asked them, "**What were you arguing about on the road?**" **But they kept quiet because on the way they had argued about who was the**



**greatest.** Sitting down, Jesus called the Twelve and said, "If anyone wants to be first, he must be the very last, and the servant of all." (Mark, 9:33-35)

... Stay there in Ephesus so that you may command certain men not to teach false doctrines any longer nor to devote themselves to **myths and endless genealogies. These promote controversies rather than God's work—which is by faith.** (1 Timothy, 1:3-4)

If anyone teaches false doctrines and does not agree to the sound instruction of... Jesus Christ and to godly teaching, he is conceited and understands nothing. **He has an unhealthy interest in controversies and quarrels about words that result in** envy, **strife**, malicious talk, evil suspicions and **constant friction between men of corrupt mind, who have been robbed of the truth** and who think that godliness is a means to financial gain. (1 Timothy, 6:3-5)

You are still worldly [following your lower self]. **For since there is jealousy and quarreling among you, are you not worldly [following your lower self]? Are you not acting like mere men?**... neither he who plants nor he who waters is anything, but only God, Who makes things grow. (1 Corinthians, 3:3, 7)

**Do everything without complaining or arguing**, so that you may become blameless and pure... [servants of] God without fault in a crooked and depraved generation, in which you shine like stars in the universe as you hold out the word of life... (Philipians, 2:14-16)

I want men everywhere to lift up holy hands in prayer, **without anger or disputing.** (1 Timothy, 2:8)

**What causes fights and quarrels among you?** Don't they come from your desires that battle within you? (James, 4:1)

You want something but don't get it. You kill and covet, but you cannot have what you want. **You quarrel and fight.** You do not have, because you do not ask God. (James, 4:2)

## Avoiding Worthless Words

But I tell you **that men will have to give account on the day of judgment for every careless word they have spoken.** (Matthew, 12:36)

**Avoid godless chatter**, because those who indulge in it will become more and more ungodly. (2 Timothy, 2:16)

**But among you there must not be** even a hint of sexual immorality, **or of any kind of impurity, or of greed, because these are improper for God's holy people. Nor should there be obscenity, foolish talk or coarse joking, which are out of place**, let there be thankfulness to God. **Let no one deceive you with empty words**, for because of such things God's wrath comes on those who are disobedient. Therefore do not be partners with them... (Ephesians, 5:3-7)

**For they mouth empty, boastful words and, by appealing to the lustful desires of sinful human nature, they entice people** who are just escaping from those who live in error. (2 Peter, 2:18)

Timothy, guard what has been entrusted to your care. **Turn away from godless chatter and the opposing ideas of what is falsely called knowledge**, which some have professed and in so doing have wandered from the faith. May God's grace be with you all. (1 Timothy, 6:20-21)

See to it that **no one takes you captive through hollow and deceptive [irreligious] philosophy, which depends on human tradition and the basic principles of this world.** (Colossians, 2:8)

## Speaking Truthfully

In everything set them an example by doing what is good. **In your teaching show integrity, seriousness and soundness of speech that cannot be condemned**, so that those who oppose you may be ashamed because they have nothing bad to say about us. (Titus, 2:7-8)

But now **you must rid yourselves of** all such things as these: anger, rage, malice, **slander, and filthy language from your lips.** (Colossians, 3:8)

**What you heard from me, keep as the pattern of sound teaching**, with faith and love in Christ Jesus [for the approval of God]. (2 Timothy, 1:13)

If anyone teaches false doctrines and **does not agree to the sound instruction of... Jesus Christ and to godly teaching, he is conceited and understands nothing.** (1 Timothy, 6:3)

He [Jesus] committed no sin, and **no deceit was found in his mouth.** (1 Peter, 2:22)

**No lie was found in their mouths.** (Revelation, 14:5)

**For out of the [unclean] heart come** evil thoughts, murder, adultery, sexual immorality, theft, **false testimony, slander. These are what make a man 'unclean'...** (Matthew, 15:19-20; Mark, 7:21-23)

Therefore, **rid yourselves of** all malice and all deceit, hypocrisy, envy, and **slander of every kind.** (1 Peter, 2:1)

## Preaching the Orders of God and the True Religion

Because of my chains, most of the brothers... **have been encouraged to speak the word of God** more courageously and fearlessly. (Philippians, 1:14)

**As you go, preach this message: ... [The life in the hereafter] is near...** Freely you have

received, freely give. (Matthew, 10:7-8)

**If anyone speaks, he should do it as one speaking the very words of God.** If anyone serves, he should do it with the strength God provides, so that in all things God may be praised... To Him be the glory and the power for ever and ever. (1 Peter, 4:11)

[Jesus:] "Righteous God, though the world does not know You, I know You... **I have made You known to them, and will continue to make You known.**" (Jude, 17:25-26)

Heal the sick who are there and **tell them, 'The kingdom of God [the life in the hereafter] is near you.'** (Luke, 10:9)

And pray for us, too, **that God may open a door for our message, so that we may proclaim the mystery of Christ [the revelation descended upon Jesus].** (Colossians, 4:3)

So from Jerusalem all the way around to Illyricum, **I have fully proclaimed the Gospel of Christ.** (Romans, 15:19)

Now, brothers, if I come to you and speak in tongues, **what good will I be to you, unless I bring you some revelation or knowledge or prophecy or word of instruction?** Even in the case of lifeless things that make sounds, such as the flute or harp, how will anyone know what tune is being played unless there is a distinction in the notes? Again, if the trumpet does not sound a clear call, who will get ready for battle? **So it is with you. Unless you speak intelligible words with your tongue, how will anyone know what you are saying?**... (1 Corinthians, 14:6-9)

**... Preach the Word [of God]; be prepared in season and out of season; correct, rebuke and encourage—with great patience and careful instruction.** For the time will come when men will not put up with sound doctrine. Instead, to suit their own desires, they will gather around them a great number of teachers to say what their itching ears want to hear. They will turn their ears away from the truth and turn aside to myths. **But you, keep your head in all situations, endure hardship. Do the work of a missionary. Devote yourself completely to your work.** (2 Timothy, 4:1-5)

Remember your leaders, **who spoke the word of God to you.** Consider the outcome of their way of life and imitate their faith. (Hebrews, 13:7)

Do not let any unwholesome talk come out of your mouths, **but only what is helpful for building others up according to their needs, that it may benefit those who listen.** (Ephesians, 4:29)

What then shall we say, brothers? When **you come together, everyone has a hymn, or a word of instruction...** a tongue or an interpretation. **All of these must be done for the strengthening of the community.** (1 Corinthians, 14:26)

**Do not rebuke an older man harshly, but exhort him as if he were your father. Treat younger men as brothers, older women as mothers, and younger women as sisters, with**

**absolute purity.** Give proper recognition to those widows who are really in need. (1 Timothy, 5:1-3)

But just as you **excel in everything—in faith, in speech [in preaching the religion of God]**, in knowledge, in complete earnestness and in your love for us-, see that you also excel in this grace of giving. (2 Corinthians, 8:7)

## **Abstaining from Gossip**

For I am afraid that when I come I may not find you as I want you to be, and you may not find me as you want me to be. **I fear that there may be** quarreling, jealousy, outbursts of anger, factions, slander, **gossip**, arrogance and disorder. (2 Corinthians, 12:20)

# PRACTICES IN THE GOSPEL COMPATIBLE WITH THE QUR'AN

## Fasting

**When you fast**, do not look somber as the hypocrites do, for they disfigure their faces to show men they are fasting... **But when you fast, put oil on your head and wash your face**, so that it will not be obvious to men that you are fasting, but only to your God, Who is unseen; and your God, Who sees what is done in secret, will reward you. (Matthew, 6:16-18)

... She never left the temple but worshiped night and day, **fasting and praying**. (Luke, 2:36-37)

... Then Jesus... **after fasting** forty days and forty nights, he was hungry. (Matthew, 4:1-2)

**For John came neither eating nor drinking...** (Matthew, 11:18; Luke, 7:33)

The Pharisee stood up and prayed about himself: 'God, I thank you that I am not like other men—robbers, evildoers, adulterers—or even like this tax collector. **I fast twice a week** and give a tenth of all I get.' (Luke, 18:11-12)

While they were worshiping the Lord and fasting... So after **they had fasted** and prayed, they placed their hands on them and sent them off... (Acts, 13:2-3)

Paul and Barnabas appointed elders for them in each church and, **with prayer and fasting**, committed them to the Lord, in whom they had put their trust. (Acts, 14:23)

... by now it was after the **fast**. (Acts, 27:9)

## Giving Alms

**So I will very gladly spend for you everything I have and expend myself as well [for God's good pleasure].** (2 Corinthians, 12:15)

... "Now then, you Pharisees clean the outside of the cup and dish, but inside you are full of greed and wickedness. You foolish people! Did not the one who made the outside make the inside also? **But give what is inside the dish to the poor, and everything will be clean for you.** (Luke, 11:39-41)

Be careful not to do your 'acts of righteousness' before men, to be seen by them. If you do, you will have no reward from your God..." **So when you give to the needy, do not announce it with trumpets**, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and on the streets, to be honored by men. I tell you the truth, they have received their reward in full. **But when you give to the needy, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing, so that your giving may be in secret.** Then your God, Who sees what is done in secret, will reward you. (Matthew, 6:1-4)

As you go, preach this message: 'The kingdom of heaven [paradise] is near.' Heal the sick... cleanse those who have leprosy... **Freely you have received, freely give. Do not take along any gold or silver or copper in your belts.** (Matthew, 10:7-9)

... And much grace was upon them all [believers]. There were no needy persons among them. **For from time to time those who owned lands or houses sold them, brought the money to the apostles and it was distributed to anyone as he had need.** (Acts, 4:33-35)

For the pagan world runs after all such things, and your God knows that you need them. But seek His kingdom [seek God's approval], and these things will be given to you as well. "Do not be afraid, little flock, for your God has been pleased to give you the kingdom. **Sell your possessions and give to the poor. Provide purses for yourselves that will not wear out, a treasure in heaven that will not be exhausted**, where no thief comes near and no moth destroys. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also. (Luke, 12:30-34)

[Jesus:] "But I tell you who hear me: **If someone takes your cloak, do not stop him from taking your tunic. Give to everyone who asks you, and if anyone takes what belongs to you, do not demand it back.** Do to others as you would have them do to you... **And if you do good to those who are good to you, what credit is that to you?** Even 'sinners' do that. And if you lend to those from whom you expect repayment, what credit is that to you? Even 'sinners' lend to 'sinners,' expecting to be repaid in full. But love your enemies, do good to them, **and lend to them without expecting to get anything back.** Then your reward will be great." (Luke, 6:27-35)

**"Do not store up for yourselves treasures on earth**, where moth and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. **But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven**, where moth and rust do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also. (Matthew, 6:19-21)

If it is encouraging, let him encourage; **if it is contributing to the needs of others, let him give generously**; if it is leadership, let him govern diligently; if it is showing mercy, let him do it cheerfully. (Romans, 12:8)

John answered, **"The man with two tunics should share with him who has none, and the one who has food should do the same"**. (Luke, 3:11)

**Share with God's people who are in need.** Practice hospitality. (Romans, 12:13)

Then Jesus said to his host, "When you give a luncheon or dinner, do not invite your friends, your brothers or relatives, or your rich neighbors; if you do, they may invite you back and so you will be repaid. **But when you give a banquet, invite the poor, the crippled, the lame, the blind, and you will be blessed.** Although they cannot repay you, you will be repaid at the resurrection of the righteous." (Luke, 14:12-14)

But Zacchaeus stood up and said... **"Here and now I give half of my possessions to the poor, and if I have cheated anybody out of anything, I will pay back four times the amount."** Jesus said to him, "Today salvation has come to this house, because this man, too, is a son of Abraham. (Luke, 19:8-9)

Jesus sat down opposite the place where the offerings were put and watched the crowd putting their money into the temple treasury. Many rich people threw in large amounts. But a poor widow came and put in two very small copper coins, worth only a fraction of a penny. Calling his disciples to him, Jesus said, **"I tell you the truth, this poor widow has put more into the treasury than all the others. They all gave out of their wealth; but she, out of her poverty, put in everything—all she had to live on."** (Mark, 12:41-44; Luke 21:1-4)

As Jesus started on his way, a man ran up to him and fell on his knees before him. "Good teacher," he asked, "what must I do to inherit eternal life [paradise]?... "You know the commandments [of God]: 'Do not murder, do not commit adultery, do not steal, do not give false testimony, do not defraud, honor your father and mother.'" "Teacher," he declared, "all these I have kept since I was a boy." **Jesus looked at him and loved him. "One thing you lack," he said. "Go, sell everything you have and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven. Then come, follow me."** At this the man's face fell. He went away sad, because he had great wealth. Jesus looked around and said to his disciples, "How hard it is for the rich [unless they give alms] to enter the kingdom of God!" The disciples were amazed at his words... The disciples were even more amazed, and said to each other, "Who then can be saved?" Peter said to him [Jesus], "We have left everything to follow you!" "I tell you the truth," Jesus replied, **"no one who has left** home or brothers or sisters or mother or father or children or **fields** for me [for the approval of God] and the Gospel will fail to receive a hundred times as much in this present age (homes, brothers, sisters, mothers, children and fields—and with them, persecutions) and in the age to come, eternal life [paradise]. But many who are first will be last, and the last first. (Mark, 10:17-31; Matthew 19:16-30; Luke 18:18-30)

Now a man named Ananias, together with his wife Sapphira, also sold a piece of property. With his wife's full knowledge he kept back part of the money for himself, but brought part of the money to the apostles. Then Peter said, **"Ananias, how is it that satan has so filled your heart that you have lied... and have kept for yourself some of the money you received for the land?** Didn't it belong to you before it was sold? And after it was sold, wasn't the money at your disposal? What made you think of doing such a thing? You have not lied to men but to God." (Acts, 5:1-4)

Now about the collection for God's people: Do what I told the Galatian churches to do. On the first day

of every week, **each one of you should set aside a sum of money in keeping with his income**, saving it up, so that when I come no collections will have to be made. Then, when I arrive, I will give letters of introduction to the men you approve and **send them with your gift...** (1 Corinthians, 16:1-4)

Because of the service by which you have proved yourselves, men will praise God for the obedience that accompanies your confession of the Gospel, and **for your generosity in sharing with them and with everyone else.** (2 Corinthians, 9:13)

**All the believers were together and had everything in common. Selling their possessions and goods, they gave to anyone as he had need.** Every day they continued to meet together in the temple courts. They broke bread in their homes and ate together with glad and sincere hearts, praising God and enjoying the favor of all the people. And the Lord added to their number daily those who were being saved. (Acts, 2:44-47)

The Pharisee stood up and prayed about himself: 'God, I thank you that I am not like other men—robbers, evildoers, adulterers—or even like this tax collector. I fast twice a week and **give a tenth of all I get.**' (Luke, 18:11-12)

This Melchizedek was king of Salem and priest of God, Most High. He met Abraham returning from the defeat of the kings and blessed him, and **Abraham gave him a tenth of everything...** (Hebrews, 7:1-2)

Moreover, as you Philippians know, in the early days of your acquaintance with the Gospel, when I set out from Macedonia, **not one church shared with me in the matter of giving and receiving, except you only;** for even when I was in Thessalonica, **you sent me aid again and again when I was in need.** Not that I am looking for a gift, but I am looking for what may be credited to your account [increase your reward in the hereafter]. I have received full payment and even more; I am amply supplied, now that I have received from Epaphroditus the gifts you sent. They are a fragrant offering, an acceptable sacrifice, pleasing to God. And my God will meet all your needs according to His glorious riches... To our God... be glory for ever and ever. Amen. (Philippians, 4:15-20)

Now, however, I am on my way to Jerusalem in the service of the saints there. For Macedonia and Achaia were **pleased to make a contribution for the poor among the saints in Jerusalem.** They were pleased to do it, and indeed they owe it to them. For if the Gentiles have shared in the Jews' spiritual blessings, they owe it to the Jews to share with them their material blessings. So **after I have completed this task and have made sure that they have received this fruit,** I will go to Spain and visit you on the way. I know that when I come to you, I will come in the full measure of the blessing of Christ. (Romans, 15:25-29)

Remember this: Whoever sows sparingly will also reap sparingly, and whoever sows generously will also reap generously. Each man should give what he has decided in his heart to give, not reluctantly or under compulsion, **for God loves a cheerful giver.** And God is able to make all grace abound to



you, so that in all things at all times, having all that you need, you will abound in every good work. (2 Corinthians, 9:6-8)

## Daily Prayer in the Gospel

To some who were confident of their own righteousness and looked down on everybody else, Jesus told this parable: "**Two men went up to the temple to pray**, one a Pharisee and the other a tax collector. The Pharisee **stood up and prayed** about himself: 'God, I thank you that I am not like other men—robbers, evildoers, adulterers—or even like this tax collector.'" (Luke, 18:9-11)

**And when you stand praying**, if you hold anything against anyone, forgive him, so that your God... forgive you your sins." (Mark, 11:25-26)

Jesus went out as usual to the Mount of Olives, and his disciples followed him. On reaching the place, he said to them, "Pray that you will not fall into temptation." He withdrew about a stone's throw beyond them, **knelt down and prayed**, "God, if You are willing, take this cup from me; yet not my will, but Yours be done." (Luke, 22:39-42)

Peter sent them all out of the room; **then he got down on his knees and prayed...** (Acts, 9:40)

When he had said this, **he knelt down with all of them and prayed.** (Acts, 20:36)

But when our time was up, we left and continued on our way. All the disciples and their wives and children accompanied us out of the city, and there on the beach **we knelt to pray.** (Acts, 21:5)

For this reason **I kneel before the God...** (Ephesians, 3:14-15)

**Then he fell on his knees** and cried out, "Lord, do not hold this sin against them." (Acts, 7:60)

Then Jesus went with his disciples to a place called Gethsemane, and he said to them, "Sit here while I go over there and pray."... Going a little farther, **he fell with his face to the ground and prayed...** (Matthew, 26:36-39)

... Jesus said to his disciples, "Sit here while I pray."... Going a little farther, **he fell to the ground and prayed...** (Mark, 14:32-35)

... so **he will fall down and worship God...** (1 Corinthians, 14:25)

... The twenty-four elders, **who were seated on their thrones** before God, **fell on their faces and worshiped God**, saying: "We give thanks to you, Lord God Almighty, the One Who is and Who was, because you have taken Your great power and have begun to reign." (Revelation, 11:16-17)

... **They fell down on their faces before the throne and worshiped** God saying: "Amen! Praise and glory and wisdom and thanks and honor and power and strength be to our God for ever and ever. Amen!" (Revelation, 7:11)

## Specified Times of Worship in the Gospel

**Very early in the morning, while it was still dark, Jesus got up, left the house and went off to a solitary place, where he prayed.** (Mark, 1:35)

After he had dismissed them, **he went up on a mountainside by himself to pray. When evening came,** he was there alone. (Matthew, 14:23)

One of those days Jesus went out to a mountainside to pray, **and spent the night praying to God.** (Luke, 6:12)

One day Peter and John were going up to the temple **at the time of prayer**—at three in the afternoon. (Acts, 3:1)

**About noon** the following day as they were on their journey and approaching the city, Peter **went up on the roof to pray.** (Acts, 10:9)

Cornelius answered: "Four days ago **I was in my house praying at this hour**, at three in the afternoon. Suddenly a man in shining clothes stood before me and said, 'Cornelius, God has heard your prayer and remembered [accepted] your gifts to the poor.'" (Acts, 10:30-31)

# THE PROPHET JESUS' (PBUH) HUMAN CHARACTERISTICS AND HIS BEING A SERVANT OF GOD

## The Prophet Jesus (pbuh) is a Human Being

... **He [Jesus] is the son of man.** "Do not be amazed at this, for a time is coming when all who are in their graves will hear His [God's] voice and come out—those who have done good will rise to live, and those who have done evil will rise to be condemned. (John, 5:27-29)

Men of Israel, listen to this: Jesus of Nazareth **was a man accredited by** God to you by miracles, wonders and signs, which God did among you through him, as you yourselves know. (Acts, 2:22)

## The Prophet Jesus' (pbuh) Birth, Lineage and Family

**She will give birth to a son,** and you are to give him the name Jesus... (Matthew, 1:21)

While they were there, **the time came for the baby to be born, and she gave birth to her firstborn, a son.** She wrapped him in cloths and placed him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inn. (Luke, 2:6-7)

Then **Jesus' mother and brothers arrived.** Standing outside, they sent someone in to call him. (Mark, 3:31)

The crowds that went ahead of him and those that followed shouted, "Hosanna to the **Son of David!**" "Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord!" "Hosanna in the highest!" When Jesus entered Jerusalem, the whole city was stirred and asked, "Who is this?" The crowds answered, "This is **Jesus, the prophet from Nazareth in Galilee.**" (Matthew, 21:9-11)

**Isn't this the carpenter? Isn't this Mary's son and the brother of James, Joseph, Judas and Simon? Aren't his sisters here with us?"...** (Mark, 6:3)

A record of **the genealogy of Jesus Christ the son of David**... (Matthew, 1:1-2)

## **The Prophet Jesus' (pbuh) Childhood, Knowledge and Physical Development**

Then Simeon blessed them and said to **Mary, his mother: "This child** is destined to cause the falling and rising of many in Israel, and to be a sign... (Luke, 2:34)

And **the child [Jesus] grew and became strong**; he was filled with wisdom, and the grace of God was upon him. (Luke, 2:40)

And **Jesus grew in wisdom and stature**, and in favor with God and men. (Luke, 2:52)

After the Feast was over, while his parents were returning home, **the boy Jesus stayed behind in Jerusalem...** Then they began looking for him among their relatives and friends. When they did not find him, they went back to Jerusalem to look for him. After three days they found him in the temple courts, **sitting among the teachers, listening to them and asking them questions. Everyone who heard him was amazed at his understanding and his answers...** (Luke, 2:43-47)

## **The Prophet Jesus' (pbuh) Eating and Drinking**

And while they still did not believe it because of joy and amazement, he asked them, **"Do you have anything here to eat?" They gave him a piece of broiled fish, and he took it and ate it in their presence.** (Luke, 24:41-43)

**While Jesus was having dinner at Levi's house...** (Mark, 2:15)

When evening came, **Jesus was reclining at the table with the Twelve.** And while they were eating, he said, "I tell you the truth, one of you will betray me." (Matthew, 26:20-21)

**... He [Jesus] was hungry.** (Matthew, 4:2)

Jesus..." returned from the Jordan... **He ate nothing during those days, and at the end of them he was hungry.** (Luke, 4:1-2)

Jacob's well was there, and Jesus, tired as he was from the journey, sat down by the well. It was about the sixth hour. When a Samaritan woman came to draw water, **Jesus said to her, "Will you give me a drink?"** (John, 4:6-7)

Jesus replied, **"The one who has dipped his hand into the bowl with me** will betray me. (Matthew, 26:23)

While **Jesus was having dinner at Levi's house**, many tax collectors and "sinners" were **eating with him** and his disciples, for there were many who followed him. (Mark, 2:15)

Now one of the Pharisees invited **Jesus to have dinner with him, so he went to the Pharisee's house and reclined at the table.** (Luke, 7:36)

While he was in Bethany, **reclining at the table in the home of a man known as Simon** the Leper, a woman came... (Mark, 14:3)

**While they were reclining at the table eating**, he said, "I tell you the truth, one of you will betray me—**one who is eating with me.**" (Mark, 14:18)

"It is one of the Twelve," he replied, "**one who dips bread into the bowl with me.**" (Mark, 14:20)

Then Levi **held a great banquet for Jesus** at his house, and a large crowd of tax collectors and others **were eating with them.** (Luke, 5:29)

On the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread, the disciples came to Jesus and asked, "**Where do you want us to make preparations for you to eat the Passover?**" (Matthew, 26:17)

Then Jesus entered a house, and again a crowd gathered, so that **he and his disciples were not even able to eat.** (Mark, 3:20)

Then, because so many people were coming and going that **they did not even have a chance to eat**, he said to them, "Come with me by yourselves to a quiet place and get some rest." (Mark, 6:31)

## **The Prophet Jesus' (pbuh) Becoming Tired and Resting and Sleeping**

... **Jesus, tired as he was from the journey, sat down by the well...** (John, 4:6)

**Jesus was in the stern, sleeping on a cushion...** (Mark, 4:38)

## **Examples of the Prophet Jesus' (pbuh) Other Human Characteristics**

Because of the crowd he told his disciples to have a small boat ready for him, **to keep the people from crowding him.** (Mark, 3:9)

## **The Prophet Jesus (pbuh) is a Servant of God**

When God raised up **His servant [Jesus]**, He sent him first to you to bless you by turning each of you from your wicked ways. (Acts, 3:26)

Jesus said to him, "... For it is written: 'Worship the Lord your God, and **serve Him only.**'" (Matthew, 4:10)

The most important one," answered Jesus, "is this: 'Hear, O Israel, **the Lord our God, the Lord is one.** Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind and with

all your strength.' (Mark, 12:29-30)

"Well said, teacher," the man replied. "**You are right in saying that God is one and there is no other but him...** When Jesus saw that he had answered wisely, he said to him, "You are not far from the kingdom of God"... (Mark, 32-34)

Jesus answered, "It is written: '**Worship the Lord your God and serve Him only.**'" (Luke, 4:8)

## **The Prophet Jesus (pbuh) is a Prophet Sent by God**

[Jesus:] **By myself I can do nothing;** I judge only as I hear, and my judgment is just, for **I seek not to please myself but Him [God] Who sent me.** (John, 5:30)

... **[God] Who sent me** has Himself testified concerning me... (John, 5:37)

... They believed **that You sent me.** (John, 17:8)

Then Jesus... "I am not here on my own, but **He [God] Who sent me is true.** You do not know Him [God], but I know Him because... **He sent me.**" (John, 7:28-29)

Jesus answered, "The work of God is this: **to believe in the one [God's messenger] He has sent.**" (John, 6:29)

For **the one whom God has sent** speaks the words of God... (John, 3:34)

After the people saw the miraculous sign that Jesus did, they began to say, "Surely **this is the prophet who is to come into the world.**" (John, 6:14)

The crowds answered, "**This is Jesus, the prophet from Nazareth in Galilee.**" (Mathew, 21:11)

... "**He was a prophet, powerful in word and deed** before God and all the people." (Luke, 24:19)

Jesus replied, "Let us go somewhere else—to the nearby villages—so **I can preach there also. That is why I have come.**" (Mark, 1:38)

And they took offense at him [Jesus]. But Jesus said to them, "**Only in his hometown and in his own house is a prophet without honor.**" (Matthew, 13:57)

They looked for a way to arrest him, but they were afraid of the crowd because **the people held that he [Jesus] was a prophet.** (Matthew, 21:46)

Jesus said to them, "**Only in his hometown, among his relatives and in his own house is a prophet without honor.**" (Mark, 6:4)

... For **they do not know the One [God] Who sent me.** [God is beyond that.] (John, 15:21)

**When God raised up His servant [Jesus],** He sent him first to you to bless you by turning each of you from your wicked ways. (Acts, 3:26)

... But he said to them, "I have food to eat that you know nothing about." Then his disciples said to each other, "Could someone have brought him food?" **"My food," said Jesus, "is to do the will of Him [God] Who sent me** and to finish His work." (John, 4:31-34)

They were all filled with awe and praised God. **"A great prophet has appeared among us,"** they said. This news about Jesus spread throughout Judea and the surrounding country. (Luke, 7:16-17)

## **The Prophet Jesus (pbuh) Fulfills God's Commands**

**... I do exactly what my Lord has commanded me...** (John, 14:31)

Jesus gave them this answer: "I tell you the truth, **the messenger can do nothing by himself...** (John, 5:19)

**... I always do what pleases Him.** (John, 8:29)

[Jesus:] **"By myself I can do nothing...** I seek not to please myself but Him [God] Who sent me." (John, 5:30)

[Jesus:] "... not to do my will but **to do the will of Him [God] Who sent me.**" (John, 6:38)

## **It is God Who Makes the Prophet Jesus (pbuh) Speak**

**... The words I say to you are not just my own...** (John, 14:10)

Jesus answered, **"My teaching is not my own. It comes from Him Who sent me.** (John, 7:16)

[Jesus:] "For **I did not speak of my own accord, but my Lord Who sent me commanded me what to say and how to say it.** I know that His command leads to eternal life. So **whatever I say is just what my Lord has told me to say.**" (John, 12:49-50)

[Jesus:] "He who does not love me will not obey my teaching. **These words you hear are not my own; they belong to my Lord Who sent me.**" (John, 14:24)

[Jesus:] "... But He [God] Who sent me is true, **and what I have heard from Him I tell the world.**" (John, 8:26)

For **the one whom God has sent speaks the words of God...** (John, 3:34)

## **It is God Who Gives the Prophet Jesus (pbuh) Everything**

**... And the power of the Lord was present for him [Jesus] to heal the sick.** (Luke, 5:17)

**"All things have been committed to me by my Lord"...** (Matthew, 11:27)

Jesus knew that **God had put all things under His power**, and that he had come from God and was returning to God. (John, 13:3)

**"My Lord, Who has given them to me**, is greater than all..." (John, 10:29)

**"... No one can come to me unless God has enabled him."** (John, 6:65)

The Jews were amazed and asked, "How did this man get such learning without having studied?" Jesus answered, **"My teaching is not my own. It comes from Him [God] Who sent me.** If anyone chooses to do God's will, he will find out whether my teaching comes from God or whether I speak on my own. He who speaks on his own does so to gain honor for himself, but **he who works for the honor of the One [God] Who sent him is a man of truth..."** (John, 7:15-18)

## **The Prophet Jesus (pbuh) Prays to and Worships God**

**Going a little farther, he fell with his face to the ground and prayed...** (Matthew, 26:39)

After he had dismissed them, **he went up on a mountainside by himself to pray...** (Matthew, 14:23)

Very early in the morning, while it was still dark, Jesus got up, left the house and went off to a solitary place, **where he prayed.** (Mark, 1:35)

After leaving them, **he went up on a mountainside to pray.** (Mark, 6:46)

... Jesus said to his disciples, **"Sit here while I pray."** (Mark, 14:32)

One of those days **Jesus went out to a mountainside to pray, and spent the night praying to God.** (Luke, 6:12)

Once when **Jesus was praying in private** and his disciples were with him... (Luke, 9:18)

One day **Jesus was praying in a certain place...** (Luke, 11:1)

... But **I have prayed for you [to God]**, Simon, that your faith may not fail... (Luke, 22:32)

Then Jesus went with his disciples to a place called Gethsemane, and he said to them, "Sit here **while I go over there and pray.**" (Matthew, 26:36)

During the days of **Jesus'** life on earth, **he offered up prayers and petitions** with loud cries and tears to the One **[God]** Who could save him from death, and he was heard because of his reverent submission. (Hebrews, 5:7)

"Bring them here to me," he said. And he directed the people to sit down on the grass. Taking the five



loaves and the two fish... **he gave thanks** and broke the loaves. Then he gave them to the disciples, and the disciples gave them to the people. (Matthew, 14:18-19)

When he was at the table with them, he took bread, **gave thanks**, broke it and began to give it to them. (Luke, 24:30)

## **The Prophet Jesus (pbuh) is Tested**

**[Jesus:] "You are those who have stood by me in my trials."** (Luke, 22:28)

The devil led him up to a high place and showed him in an instant all the kingdoms of the world. And he said to him, "I will give you all their authority and splendor, for it has been given to me, and I can give it to anyone I want to. **So if you worship me, it will all be yours.**" **Jesus answered, "It is written: 'Worship the Lord your God and serve Him only.'**" (Luke, 4:5-8)

Then Jesus was led... into the desert to **be tempted by the devil**. (Matthew, 4:1)

**Jesus...** returned from the Jordan and... **for forty days he was tempted by the devil**. (Luke, 4.1-2)

And **he [Jesus] was** in the desert forty days, being **tempted by satan...** (Mark, 1:13)

**After the devil had finished tempting Jesus in every possible way, he left him until another time.** (Luke, 4:13)

# THE SECRET OF THE TEST AND THE TESTS FACED BY BELIEVERS IN THE GOSPEL

## Believers Struggle with Their Lives and Chattels on God's Path

"Tell you the truth," Jesus replied, "**no one who has left home or brothers or sisters or mother or father or children or fields for me [for the approval of God] and the Gospel will fail to receive a hundred times as much in this present age (homes, brothers, sisters, mothers, children and fields—and with them, persecutions) and in the age to come, eternal life.** But many who are first will be last, and the last first." (Mark, 10:29-31)

For whoever wants to save his life will lose it, **but whoever loses his life for me [for the approval of God] will find it. What good will it be for a man if he gains the whole world, yet forfeits his soul?** Or what can a man give in exchange for his soul? (Matthew, 16:25-26)

[Jesus:] **And everyone who has left houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or children or fields for my sake [for the approval of God] will receive a hundred times as much and will inherit eternal life [paradise].** But many who are first will be last, and many who are last will be first. (Matthew, 19:29-30)

Then He [Jesus] called the crowd to him along with his disciples and said: "**If anyone would come after me, he must deny himself [renounce the world]... and follow me. For whoever wants to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for me [for the approval of God] and for the Gospel will save it.** What good is it for a man to gain the whole world, yet forfeit his soul? Or what can a man give in exchange for his soul? (Mark, 8:34-17; Luke 9:23-25)

For none of them needed anything, **because everyone who had land or houses would sell them and bring the money received for the things sold and bring the money to the apostles to give to those in need.** (Acts, 4:34-35)

[Jesus:] "Whoever finds his life will lose it, and **whoever loses his life for my sake [for the approval of God] will find it.**" (Matthew, 10:39; Luke 17:33)

**As a prisoner for the Lord,** then, I urge you to live a life worthy of the calling you have received. (Ephesians, 4:1)

The man who loves his life will lose it, **while the man who hates his life in this world will keep it for eternal life [paradise].** (John, 12:25)

**But I don't place any value on my life,** if only I can finish my race and the ministry that I

received... of testifying to the Gospel of God's grace. (Acts, 20:24)

The promise to which our twelve tribes hope to attain, **as they earnestly serve God night and day...** (Acts, 26:7)

... Honor men like him, because **he almost died for the work of Christ [while spreading the words of Christ for the approval of God], risking his life to make up for the help you could not give me.** (Philippians, 2:29-30)

So then, **those who suffer according to God's will should commit themselves to their faithful Creator and continue to do good.** (1 Peter, 4:19)

... **We were delighted to share with you not only the Gospel of God but [for the approval of God] our lives as well...** (1 Thessalonians, 2:8)

## **Unbelievers Torture and Imprison Believers for No Just Reason**

[Jesus:] "You must be on your guard. **You will be handed over to the local councils and flogged... On account of me [because you obey me to gain God's good pleasure] you will stand before governors and kings** as witnesses to them. And the Gospel must first be preached to all nations. Whenever you are arrested and brought to trial, do not worry beforehand about what to say. Just say whatever is given you at the time, for it is not you speaking, but the Spirit of God. Brother will betray brother to death, and a father his child. Children will rebel against their parents and have them put to death. **All men will hate you because of me [because you obey me to gain God's good pleasure],** but he who stands firm to the end will be saved." (Mark, 13:9-13)

[Jesus:] "... When you hear of wars and revolutions, do not be frightened. These things must happen first, but the end will not come right away." Then he said to them: "Nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. There will be great earthquakes, famines and pestilences in various places, and fearful events and great signs from heaven. **"But before all this, they will lay hands on you and persecute you. They will deliver you to... prisons, and you will be brought before kings and governors, and all on account of my name... You will be betrayed even by parents, brothers, relatives and friends, and they will put some of you to death. All men will hate you because of me.** But not a hair of your head will perish. By standing firm you will gain life." (Luke, 21:5-19)

... **[They] came up to Peter and John while they were speaking to the people. They were greatly disturbed** because the apostles were teaching the people [the revelation of God] and proclaiming... They seized Peter and John, and **because it was evening, they put them in jail**

**until the next day.** But many who heard the message believed, and the number of men grew to about five thousand. (Acts, 4:1-4)

On that day **a great persecution broke out** against the church at Jerusalem... Saul **began to destroy the church. Going from house to house, he dragged off men and women and put them in prison.** Those who had been scattered preached the word wherever they went. (Acts, 8:1-4)

The crowd joined in the attack against Paul and Silas, and the magistrates ordered them to be stripped and beaten. **After they had been severely flogged, they were thrown into prison,** and the jailer was commanded to guard them carefully. Upon receiving such orders, **he put them in the inner cell and fastened their feet in the stocks.** About midnight Paul and Silas were praying and singing hymns to God, and the other prisoners were listening to them. Suddenly there was such a violent earthquake that the foundations of the prison were shaken. At once all the prison doors flew open, and everybody's chains came loose. (Acts, 16:22-26)

At that time Herod the tetrarch heard the reports about Jesus, and he said to his attendants, "This is John the Baptist... Now Herod had **arrested John and bound him and put him in prison... Herod wanted to kill John, but he was afraid of the people,** because they considered him a prophet. (Matthew, 14:1-5)

This is the Gospel I tell others. **Because of it [for the approval of God] I am experiencing trouble, even to the point of being chained like a criminal.** However, God's word is not chained. (2 Timothy, 2:8-9)

Rather, **as servants of God we commend ourselves in every way: in great endurance; in troubles, hardships and distresses; in beatings, imprisonments and riots; in hard work, sleepless nights and hunger;** in purity, understanding, patience and kindness... and in sincere love; in truthful speech and in the power of God... We are honest, but **they call us impostors.** (2 Corinthians, 6:4-8)

[Prophets] who through faith conquered kingdoms, administered justice, and gained what was promised; who shut the mouths of lions, quenched the fury of the flames, and escaped the edge of the sword; whose weakness was turned to strength; and who became powerful in battle and routed foreign armies... **Others were tortured** and refused to be released, **so that they might gain a better resurrection. Some faced jeers and flogging, while still others were chained and put in prison. They were stoned; they were sawed in two; they were put to death by the sword.** They went about in sheepskins and goatskins, **destitute, persecuted and mistreated**—the world was not worthy of them. They wandered in deserts and mountains, and in caves and holes in the ground. (Hebrews, 11:33-38)

Keep on loving each other as brothers. Do not forget to entertain strangers, for by so doing some people have entertained angels without knowing it. **Remember those in prison as if you were their fellow prisoners,** and **those who are mistreated** as if you yourselves were suffering.

(Hebrews, 13:1-3)

... **I know the slander of those...** Do not be afraid of what you are about to suffer. I tell you, the devil **will put some of you in prison to test you**, and you will suffer persecution for ten days. Be faithful, even to the point of death, and I will give you the crown of life [paradise]. (Revelation, 2:9-10)

## Unbelievers Seek to Kill or Exile Believers

... [Believers] honored the word of the Lord; and all who were appointed for eternal life [paradise] believed. The word of the Lord spread through the whole region. They [unbelievers] **stirred up persecution** against Paul and Barnabas, and **expelled them from their region**. (Acts, 13:48-50)

[Jesus:] "**Then you will be handed over to be persecuted and put to death, and you will be hated by all nations** because of me [because you obey me for the approval of God]." (Matthew, 24:9-10)

[Jesus:] "But before all this, they will lay hands on you and persecute you. They will deliver you to... prisons, and you will be brought before kings and governors, and all on account of my name [because you obey me for the approval of God]... You will be betrayed even by parents, brothers, relatives and friends, and **they will put some of you to death**." (Luke, 21:12-16)

[Jesus:] "All this I have told you so that you will not go astray... **in fact, a time is coming when anyone who kills you will think he is offering a service to God**. They will do such things because they have not known the God or me. I have told you this, so that when the time comes you will remember that I warned you." (John, 16:1-4)

... so that they [prophets] might gain a better resurrection [in the hereafter]. Some faced jeers and flogging, while still others were chained and put in prison. **They were stoned; they were sawed in two; they were put to death by the sword**. They went about in sheepskins and goatskins, destitute, persecuted and mistreated—the world was not worthy of them. They wandered in deserts and mountains, and in caves and holes in the ground. (Hebrews, 11:35-38)

## The False Accusations and Oppression Directed against Believers

[Jesus:] "Blessed are those who are persecuted because of righteousness... Blessed are you **when people insult you, persecute you and falsely say all kinds of evil against you** because of me [for the approval of God]. Rejoice and be glad, because great is your reward in heaven, **for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who were before you**." (Matthew, 5:10-12)

Blessed are you **when men hate you, when they exclude you and insult you and reject your name as evil, because of the son of man** [your obedience to Jesus for the approval of God]. Rejoice in that day and leap for joy, because great is your reward in heaven. For that is how their fathers treated the prophets. (Luke, 6:22-23)

**They called the apostles in and had them flogged. Then they ordered them not to speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go. The apostles left... rejoicing because they had been counted worthy of suffering disgrace for the name [for Jesus for the approval of God].** Day after day, in the temple courts and from house to house, they kept teaching and proclaiming that Jesus is the Messiah. (Acts, 5:40-42)

[Jesus:] "Remember the words I spoke to you: ... **If they persecuted me, they will persecute you also...** They will treat you this way because of my name [because you obey me for the approval of God], for they do not know the One [God] Who sent me." (John, 15:20-21)

We work hard with our own hands. **When we are cursed, we bless; when we are persecuted, we endure it; when we are slandered, we answer kindly.** (1 Corinthians, 4:12-13)

Who will bring any charge against those whom God has chosen? It is God Who justifies. Who is he that condemns?... Who shall separate us from the love of Christ [for the approval of God]? **Shall trouble or hardship or persecution or famine or nakedness or danger or sword?** As it is written: **"For your sake [because we obey Jesus for the approval of God] we face death all day long; we are considered as sheep to be slaughtered."** No, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him who loved us. (Romans, 8:33-37)

Live such good lives among the pagans that, **though they accuse you of doing wrong,** they may see your good deeds and glorify God when He judges the world. (1 Peter, 2:12)

That is why, for Christ's sake, **[because you obey Jesus for the approval of God] I delight in weaknesses, in insults, in hardships, in persecutions, in difficulties.** For when I am weak [in this world], then I am strong [in the hereafter]. (2 Corinthians, 12:10)

But do this with gentleness and respect, keeping a clear conscience, **so that those who speak maliciously against your good behavior in Christ [for the approval of God] may be ashamed of their slander.** It is better, if it is God's will, to suffer for doing good than for doing evil. (1 Peter, 3:16-17)

You, however, know all about my teaching, my way of life, my purpose, faith, patience, love, endurance, **persecutions, sufferings—what kinds of things happened to me** in Antioch, Iconium and Lystra, the **persecutions I endured.** Yet the Lord rescued me from all of them. **In fact, everyone who wants to live a godly life [life devoted to God]... will be persecuted,** while evil men and impostors will go from bad to worse, deceiving and being deceived. (2 Timothy, 3:10-13)

## Unbelievers' Mockery of Believers

The men who were guarding Jesus **began mocking**... (Luke, 22:63)

**Some [believers] faced jeers and flogging**, while still others were chained and put in prison. (Hebrews, 11:36)

... **They... mocked him [Jesus]**. (Matthew, 27:29)

[Jesus:] "... You cannot serve both God and Money." **The Pharisees, who loved money, heard all this and were sneering at Jesus**. He said to them, "You are the ones who justify yourselves in the eyes of men, but God knows your hearts. What is highly valued among men is detestable in God's Sight."... (Luke, 16:13-15)

Jesus turned and saw her. "Take heart, daughter," he said, "your faith has healed you." And the woman was healed from that moment. When Jesus entered the ruler's house and saw the flute players and the noisy crowd, he said, "Go away. The girl is not dead but asleep." **But they laughed at him**. After the crowd had been put outside, he went in and took the girl by the hand, and she got up. News of this spread through all that region. (Matthew, 9:22-26)

... When they came to the home of the synagogue ruler, Jesus saw a commotion, with people crying and wailing loudly. He went in and said to them, "Why all this commotion and wailing? The child is not dead but asleep." **But they laughed at him**. After he put them all out, he took the child's father and mother and the disciples who were with him, and went in where the child was. He took her by the hand and said to her, "Talitha koum!" (which means, "Little girl, I say to you, get up!"). Immediately the girl stood up and walked around (she was twelve years old). At this they were completely astonished. (Mark, 5:38-42; Luke 8:50-55)

When they heard about the resurrection of the dead, **some of them sneered**... (Acts, 17:32)

## How People Shun Believers

... And all the believers used to meet together in Solomon's Colonnade. **No one else dared join them, even though they were highly regarded by the people**. (Acts, 5:12-13)

Blessed are you **when men hate you, when they exclude you and insult you and reject your name as evil, because of the son of man [because your devotion to Jesus for the approval of God]**. Rejoice in that day and leap for joy, because great is your reward in heaven. For that is how their fathers treated the prophets. (Luke, 6:22-23)

[Jesus:] "**All men will hate you because of me [because you obey me for the approval of God]**, but he who stands firm to the end will be saved." (Matthew, 10:22)

## Believers are Tested on God's Path

Consider it pure joy, **my brothers, whenever you face trials of many kinds**, because you know that the **testing of your faith** develops perseverance. Perseverance must finish its work so that you may be mature and complete, not lacking anything. (James, 1:2-4)

**Blessed is the man who perseveres under trial, because when he has stood the test**, he will receive the crown of life [paradise] that God has promised to those who love Him. (James, 1:12)

In this you greatly rejoice, **though now for a little while you may have had to suffer** grief in all kinds of trials. (1 Peter, 1:6)

**No temptation has seized you except what is common to man.** And God is faithful; He will not let you be tempted beyond what you can bear. But when you are tempted, **he will also provide a way out so that you can stand up under it.** (1 Corinthians, 10:13)

if this is so, then the Lord knows how to rescue **godly men from trials** and to hold the unrighteous for the day of judgment, while continuing their punishment. (2 Peter, 2:9)

... We sent Timothy... to strengthen and encourage you in your faith, so that **no one would be unsettled by these trials. You know quite well that we were destined for them. In fact, when we were with you, we kept telling you that we would be persecuted.** And it turned out that way, as you well know. (1 Thessalonians, 3:2-4)

And now, brothers, we want you to know about the grace that God has given the Macedonian churches. **Out of the most severe trial**, their overflowing joy and their extreme poverty welled up in rich generosity. For I testify that they gave as much as they were able, and even beyond their ability. Entirely on their own, they urgently pleaded with us for the privilege of sharing in this service to the saints [those who devote themselves to God]. (2 Corinthians, 8:1-4)

They preached the good news [God's commandments] in that city and won a large number of disciples. Then they returned to Lystra, Iconium and Antioch, strengthening the disciples and encouraging them to remain true to the faith. **"We must go through many hardships to enter the kingdom of God [paradise],"** they said. (Acts, 14:20-22)

## Believers' Knowledge of the Secret of the Test and Their Courage on God's Path

So **do not throw away your confidence; it will be richly rewarded.** You need to persevere so that when you have done the will of God, you will receive what He has promised... But we are not of



those who shrink back and are destroyed, but of those who believe and are saved. (Hebrews, 10:35-36, 39)

Who is going to harm you if you are eager to do good? But even if you should suffer for what is right, you are blessed. **"Do not fear what they fear; do not be frightened."** (1 Peter, 3:13-14)

After they prayed, the place where they were meeting was shaken. And they were all filled with the Spirit of God **and spoke the word of God boldly**. (Acts, 4:31)

**Therefore, since through God's mercy we have this ministry, we do not lose heart.** Rather, we have renounced secret and shameful ways; we do not use deception, nor do we distort the word of God. On the contrary, by setting forth the truth plainly we commend ourselves to every man's conscience in the Sight of God. (2 Corinthians, 4:1-2)

Then Paul and Barnabas **answered them boldly: "We had to speak the word of God to you first.** Since you reject it and do not consider yourselves worthy of eternal life [paradise], we now turn to the Gentiles." (Acts, 13:46)

For everything that was written in the past was written to teach us, so that through endurance and the encouragement **of the Scriptures we might have hope. May the God Who gives endurance and encouragement** give you a spirit of unity among yourselves... so that with one heart and mouth you may glorify the God... (Romans, 15:4-6)

So Paul and Barnabas spent considerable time there, **speaking boldly for the Lord**... (Acts, 14:3)

**Paul entered the synagogue and spoke boldly there for three months**, arguing persuasively about the kingdom of God [hereafter]. **But some of them became obstinate; they refused to believe** and publicly maligned the Way. So Paul left them. He took the disciples with him and had discussions daily in the lecture hall of Tyrannus. **This went on for two years**, so that all the Jews and Greeks who lived in the province of Asia **heard the word [the revelation] of the Lord**. (Acts, 19:8-11)

For two whole years Paul stayed there in his own rented house and welcomed all who came to see him. **Boldly and without hindrance he preached the kingdom of God [hereafter] and taught about the... Messiah.** (Acts, 28:30-31)

... much more that which remains is in glory. Therefore, **since we have such a hope, we speak very boldly**. (2 Corinthians, 3:11-12)

... With that same spirit of faith we also believe and therefore speak... so that the grace that is reaching more and more people may cause thanksgiving to overflow to the glory of God. **Therefore we do not lose heart.** Though outwardly we are wasting away, yet inwardly we are being renewed day by day. For our light and momentary troubles are achieving for us an eternal glory that far

outweighs them all. So we fix our eyes not on what is seen, but on what is unseen. For what is seen is temporary, but what is unseen is eternal. (2 Corinthians, 4:13-18)

**Therefore we are always confident... We live by faith, not by sight. We are confident, I say, and would prefer to be away from the body and at home with the Lord.** So we make it our goal to please Him, whether we are at home in the body or away from it. (2 Corinthians, 5:6-9)

For which I am an ambassador in chains. Pray that **I may declare it [God's commandments] fearlessly, as I should.** (Ephesians, 6:20)

You know, brothers, that our visit to you was not a failure. We had previously suffered and been insulted in Philippi, **as you know, but with the help of our God we dared to tell you His Gospel in spite of strong opposition.** (1 Thessalonians, 2:1-2)

**... May our... God... Who loved us and by His grace gave us eternal encouragement and good hope,** encourage your hearts and strengthen you in every good deed and word. (2 Thessalonians, 2:16-17)

Those who have served well [lived for the approval of God] **gain an excellent standing and great assurance in their faith...** (1 Timothy, 3:13)

But he replied [to Jesus], **"... I am ready to go with you to prison and to death [for the approval of God]."** (Luke, 22:33)

Because of my chains, **most of the brothers in the Lord have been encouraged to speak the word of God more courageously and fearlessly...** I eagerly expect and hope that I will in no way be ashamed, but will have sufficient courage... whether by life or by death. (Philippians, 1:14, 20)

**He chose to be mistreated along with the people of God [believers]** rather than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a short time. He regarded disgrace... as of greater value than the treasures of Egypt, because he was looking ahead to his reward [in the hereafter]. **By faith he left Egypt, not fearing the king's anger;** he persevered because he saw him who is invisible. (Hebrews, 11:25-27)

"Enter through the narrow gate. For wide is the gate and broad is the road that leads to destruction [torment in hell], and many enter through it. **But small is the gate and narrow the road that leads to life [paradise],** and only a few find it." (Matthew, 7:13-14)

... They called the apostles in and had them flogged. Then they ordered them not to speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go. The apostles left... **rejoicing because they had been counted worthy of suffering disgrace for the name [for the approval of God].** Day after day, in the temple courts and from house to house, they never stopped teaching and proclaiming the good news that Jesus is the Messiah. (Acts, 5:40-42)

# THE CHARACTER OF THE HYPOCRITE IN THE GOSPEL

## They Only Abide by Religion Superficially and Do Not Truly Believe

Woe to you... you hypocrites! **You give a tenth of your spices—mint, dill and cummin. But you have neglected the more important matters of the law [God's commandments]—justice, mercy and faithfulness.** You should have done these things without neglecting the others. You blind guides! **You strain out a gnat but swallow a camel.** (Matthew, 23:23-24)

Woe to you... you hypocrites! **You clean the outside of the cup and dish, but inside they are full of greed and self-indulgence.** You blind Pharisee! First clean the inside of the cup and dish, and then the outside also will be clean. (Matthew, 23:25-26)

Woe to you... **because you give... a tenth of your mint, rue and all other kinds of garden herbs, but you neglect justice and the love of God. These are the things you should have done without neglecting the others.** (Luke, 11:42)

... You... **clean the outside of the cup and dish, but inside you are full of greed and wickedness.** You foolish people! Didn't God make the inside as well as the outside? But give what is inside the dish to the poor, and everything will be clean for you. (Luke, 11:39-41)

## They Try to Portray Religion as Difficult

Jesus replied, "And you experts in the law [Holy Book scholars], woe to you, because **you load people down with burdens they can hardly carry, and you yourselves will not lift one finger to help them.**" (Luke, 11:46)

Then Jesus said to the crowds and to his disciples: "... So you must obey them and do everything they tell you. But do not do what they do, for they do not practice what they preach. **They tie up heavy loads and put them on men's shoulders, but they themselves are not willing to lift a finger to move them.** Everything they do is done for men to see..." (Matthew, 23:1-5)

## They Add Things to Religion and Multiply Lawful and Unlawful Things to Appear Full of Devotion

... **Hypocritical liars**, whose consciences have been seared as with a hot iron. **They... order them to abstain from certain foods, which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and who know the truth.** (1 Timothy, 4:1-3)

Since you died... to the basic principles of this world, why, as though you still belonged to it, do you submit to its rules: **"Do not handle! Do not taste! Do not touch!" These are all destined to perish with use, because they are based on human commands and teachings.** Such regulations indeed have an appearance of wisdom, with their self-imposed worship, their false humility and their harsh treatment of the body, but they lack any value in restraining sensual indulgence. (Colossians, 2:20-23)

He replied... **"Their [hypocrites'] teachings are but rules taught by men. You have let go of the commands of God and are holding on to the traditions of men."** And he said to them: **"You have a fine way of setting aside the commands of God in order to observe your own traditions!"** (Mark, 7:6-9)

## **They are Secretly Irreligious**

For certain men whose condemnation was written about long ago **have secretly slipped in among you. They are godless men, who** change the grace of our God into a license for immorality... (Jude, 1:4)

But mark this: There will be terrible times in the last days. **People will be... lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God—having a form of godliness but denying its power.** Have nothing to do with them. (2 Timothy, 3:1-5)

## **Although They Possess Knowledge, They Do Not Understand Faith**

... People will be... having a form of godliness but denying its power... They are the kind who worm their way into homes... who are loaded down with sins and are swayed by all kinds of evil desires, **always learning but never able to acknowledge the truth.** (2 Timothy, 3:1-7)

... The goal of this command is love, which comes from a pure heart and a good conscience and a sincere faith. **Some have wandered away from these and turned to meaningless talk. They want to be teachers of the law [God's commandments], but they do not know what they are talking about or what they so confidently affirm.** (1 Timothy, 1:3-7)

## **They Say What is Not in Their Hearts**

He replied, "Isaiah was right when he prophesized about you hypocrites; as it is written '**These people honor me with their lips, but their hearts are far from me.**'" (Mark, 7:6; Matthew 15:7-8)

... **The goal of this command is love, which comes from a pure heart and a good conscience and a sincere faith. Some have wandered away from these and turned to meaningless talk.** They want to be teachers of the law [God's commandments], but they do not know what they are talking about or what they so confidently affirm. (1 Timothy, 1:3-7)

But one of his disciples, **Judas Iscariot, who was later to betray him, objected, "Why wasn't this perfume sold and the money given to the poor? It was worth a year's wages." He did not say this because he cared about the poor but because he was a thief;** as keeper of the money bag, he used to help himself to what was put into it. (John, 12:4-6)

## **They Worship for Show**

While all the people were listening, Jesus said to his disciples, **"Beware of the teachers of the law. They like to walk around in flowing robes and love to be greeted in the marketplaces and have the most important seats in the prayer houses and the places of honor at banquets.** They devour widows' houses and **for a show make lengthy prayers... Such men will be punished most severely."** (Luke, 20:45-47; Mark, 12:38-40)

**And when you pray, do not be like the hypocrites, for they love to pray standing in the prayer houses and on the street corners to be seen by men. I tell you the truth, they have received their reward in full.** (Matthew, 6:5)

Then Jesus said to the crowds and to his disciples: "... So you must obey them and do everything they tell you. But do not do what they do, for they do not practice what they preach. They tie up heavy loads and put them on men's shoulders, but they themselves are not willing to lift a finger to move them. **Everything they do is done for men to see...**" (Matthew, 23:1-5)

Woe to you... **you love the most important seats in the synagogues and greetings in the marketplaces.** Woe to you, because you are like unmarked graves, which men walk over without knowing it. (Luke, 11:43-44)

## **They Worry about Other People's Approval, Instead of God's**

Yet at the same time many even among the leaders believed in him. But... they would not confess their faith... **for they loved praise from men more than praise from God.** (John, 12:42-43)

## They Do Not Do What They Tell Others to Do

Then Jesus said to the crowds and to his disciples: "... So you must obey them and do everything they tell you. But do not do what they do, **for they do not practice what they preach**. They tie up heavy loads and put them on men's shoulders, but they themselves are not willing to lift a finger to move them. Everything they do is done for men to see..." (Matthew, 23:1-5)

**How can you say to your brother, 'Brother, let me take the speck out of your eye,' when you yourself fail to see the plank in your own eye? You hypocrite**, first take the plank out of your eye, and then you will see clearly to remove the speck from your brother's eye. (Luke, 6:42)

## Their External Appearances are Deceptive

Woe to you... you hypocrites! **You are like whitewashed tombs, which look beautiful on the outside but on the inside are full of dead men's bones and everything unclean**. In the same way, on the outside you appear to people as righteous but on the inside you are full of hypocrisy and wickedness. (Matthew, 23:27-28)

## They Plot against Believers

**Then they sent some... to him, intending to trap him in what he said.** (Mark, 12:13)

When Jesus left there... **began to oppose him fiercely and to besiege him with questions, waiting to catch him in something he might say.** (Luke, 11:53-54)

**I have been constantly on the move. I have been in danger from rivers, in danger from bandits, in danger from my own countrymen, in danger from Gentiles; in danger in the city, in danger in the country, in danger at sea; and in danger from false brothers.** (2 Corinthians, 11:26)

## They Join Believers to Send Reports to Deniers

Keeping a close watch on him, **they sent spies, who pretended to be honest**. They hoped to catch Jesus in something he said so that they might hand him over to the power and authority of the governor. (Luke, 20:20)

## They Seek to Have Believers Imprisoned with False Evidence

Keeping a close watch on him, they sent spies, who pretended to be honest. **They hoped to catch**

**Jesus in something he said so that they might hand him over to the power and authority of the governor.** (Luke, 20:20)

While he was still speaking, Judas, one of the Twelve, arrived. With him was a large crowd armed with swords and clubs, sent from the chief priests and the elders of the people... Judas... **the betrayer had arranged a signal with them:** "The one I kiss is the man; **arrest him and lead him away under guard**"... (Matthew, 26:47-49; Mark 14:43-45)

## **They Seek to Kill or Exile Believers**

All the people... were furious when they heard this. **They got up, drove him out of the town, and took him to the brow of the hill on which the town was built, in order to throw him down the cliff.** But he walked right through the crowd and went on his way. (Luke, 4:28-30)

Woe to you... **'I will send them prophets and apostles, some of whom they will kill and others they will persecute.'** (Luke, 11:47-49)

[Jesus:] "I know you are Abraham's descendants. **Yet you are ready to kill me,** because you have no room for my word." (John, 8:37)

## **They Collaborate against and Betray Believers**

... He [Jesus] said, **"I tell you the truth, one of you will betray me—one who is eating with me."**... "It is one of the Twelve," he replied, "one who dips bread into the bowl with me." (Mark, 14:18-20)

**Then one of the Twelve—the one called Judas Iscariot—went to the chief priests and asked, "What are you willing to give me if I hand him [Jesus] over to you?"** So they counted out for him thirty silver coins. **From then on Judas watched for an opportunity to hand him over...** (Matthew, 26:14-16; Mark 14:10-11)

While he was still speaking, Judas, one of the Twelve, arrived. With him was a large crowd armed with swords and clubs, sent from the chief priests and the elders of the people. **Now the betrayer had arranged a signal with them:** "The one I kiss is the man; **arrest him.**" Going at once to Jesus, Judas said, "Greetings, Rabbi!" and kissed him... (Matthew, 26:47-49; Mark 14:43-45)

Then satan entered Judas, called Iscariot, one of the Twelve. And Judas went... **discussed with them how he might betray Jesus.** They were delighted and agreed to give him money. He consented, and watched for an opportunity to hand Jesus over to them when no crowd was present. (Luke, 22:3-6)

Then Jesus replied, **"Have I not chosen you, the Twelve? Yet one of you is a devil!"** He meant

Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot, who, though one of the Twelve, **was later to betray him**. (John, 6:70-71)

## **They are Full of Hatred toward Believers**

All the people... **were furious** when they heard this. They got up, drove him out of the town, and took him to the brow of the hill on which the town was built, in order to throw him down the cliff. But he walked right through the crowd and went on his way. (Luke, 4:28-30)

The... teachers of the law were looking for a reason to accuse Jesus, so they watched him closely... But Jesus knew what they were thinking... **But they were furious and began to discuss with one another what they might do to Jesus**. (Luke, 6:7-11)

## **They Deliberately Watch out and Seek Weaknesses among Muslims**

**They were using this question as a trap, in order to have a basis for accusing him [Jesus]**. .. When they kept on questioning him, he straightened up and said to them, "Let him who is without sin among you be the first to throw a stone at her." (John, 8:6-7)

**But Jesus, knowing their evil intent, said, "You hypocrites, why are you trying to trap me?"** (Matthew, 22:18)

## **They Invent Excuses to Avoid Striving on God's Path**

He [Jesus] said to another man, "Follow me." But the man replied, "Lord, first let me go and bury my father." Jesus said to him, "Let the dead bury their own dead, but you go and proclaim the kingdom of God [hereafter]." Still another said, "I will follow you... but first let me go back and say good-by to my family." Jesus replied, "No one who puts his hand to the plow and looks back is fit for service in the kingdom of God [Paradise]"... (Luke, 9:57-62; Matthew, 8:19-22)

## **They Do Not Want to Spend in the Way of God**

[Jesus:] "You know the commandments: 'Do not commit adultery, do not murder, do not steal, do not give false testimony, honor your father and mother.'" "All these I have kept since I was a boy," he said. When Jesus heard this, he said to him, "**You still lack one thing. Sell everything you have and give to the poor, and you will have**



**treasure in heaven. Then come, follow me." When he heard this, he became very sad, because he was a man of great wealth.** Jesus looked at him and said, "How hard it is for the rich to enter the kingdom of God [paradise]! Indeed, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God [paradise]." (Luke, 18:20-25)

Now a man named Ananias, together with his wife Sapphira, also sold a piece of property. **With his wife's full knowledge he kept back part of the money for himself, but brought the rest and put it at the apostles' feet.** Then Peter said, "Ananias, how is it that Satan has so filled your heart that **you... have kept for yourself some of the money you received for the land?** Didn't it belong to you before it was sold? And after it was sold, wasn't the money at your disposal? **What made you think of doing such a thing? You have not lied to men but to God.**" (Acts, 5:1-4)

People who want to get rich fall into temptation and a trap and into many foolish and harmful desires that plunge men into ruin and destruction. For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil. **Some people, eager for money, have wandered from the faith and pierced themselves with many griefs.** (1 Timothy, 6:9-10)

## **They Approach Believers out of Self-Interest**

In the very same way, **these dreamers... they have rushed for profit into Balaam's error... These men are blemishes at your love feasts, eating with you without the slightest qualm—shepherds who feed only themselves...** These men are grumblers and faultfinders; they follow their own evil desires; they boast about themselves and **flatter others for their own advantage.** (Jude, 1:8, 11-12, 16)

**... They are... reveling in their pleasures while they feast with you.** With eyes full of adultery, they never stop sinning; they seduce the unstable; **they are experts in greed—an accursed brood!** (2 Peter, 2:13-14)

## **They Abandon Believers When There is Nothing to Gain from Them**

... Now many antichrists have come... **They went out from us, but they did not really belong to us. For if they had belonged to us, they would have remained with us; but their going showed that none of them belonged to us.** (1 John, 2:18-19)

## They are Unwise

... Yet **these men**... what things they do understand by instinct, **like unreasoning animals**—these are the very things that destroy them. (Jude, 1:8,10)

... Bold and arrogant, these men are not afraid to slander celestial beings [God is beyond this]... But these men blaspheme in matters they do not understand. **They are like brute beasts, creatures of instinct, born only to be caught and destroyed**, and like beasts they too will perish. They will be paid back with harm for the harm they have done. Their idea of pleasure is to carouse in broad daylight. They are blots and blemishes... (2 Peter, 2:10-13)

## They are Arrogant and Unpleasantly Brazen

**Bold and arrogant, these men are not afraid to slander celestial beings [God is beyond this]...** these men blaspheme in matters they do not understand. They are like brute beasts, creatures of instinct, born only to be caught and destroyed, and like beasts they too will perish... (2 Peter, 2:10-12)

**In the very same way, these dreamers pollute their own bodies, reject authority and slander celestial beings...** Yet these men speak abusively against whatever they do not understand... (Jude, 1:8-10)

## They Seek to Hinder Other People's Faith

Woe to you experts in the law [Holy Book scholars], because you have taken away the key to knowledge. You **yourselves have not entered, and you have hindered those who were entering**. (Luke, 11:52)

Woe to you... hypocrites! **You shut the kingdom of heaven [paradise] in men's faces. You yourselves do not enter, nor will you let those enter who are trying to.** (Matthew, 23:13-14)

## They Seek to Divert People Whose Faith is Weak from the True Path

... They are... reveling in their pleasures while they feast with you. With eyes full of adultery, they never stop sinning; **they seduce the unstable**; they are experts in greed—an accursed brood! (2 Peter, 2:13-14)

**For they [hypocrites] mouth empty, boastful words and, by appealing to the lustful desires of sinful human nature**, they entice people who are just escaping from those who live in error. (2 Peter, 2:18)

I urge you, brothers, to watch out for those who cause divisions and put obstacles in your way that are contrary to the teaching you have learned. Keep away from them. For such people are not serving ... Christ, but their own appetites. **By smooth talk and flattery they deceive the minds of naive people.** (Romans, 16:17-18)

Woe to you... **you hypocrites! You travel over land and sea to win a single convert, and when he becomes one, you make him twice as much a son of hell as you are.** (Matthew, 23:15)

For false Christs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and miracles **to deceive even the elect—if that were possible.** See, I have told you ahead of time. (Matthew, 24:24-25)

Who have wandered away from the truth... **they destroy the faith of some.** Nevertheless, God's solid foundation stands firm, sealed with this inscription: "The Lord knows those who are His," and, "Everyone who confesses the name of the Lord must turn away from wickedness." In a large house there are articles not only of gold and silver, but also of wood and clay; some are for noble purposes and some for ignoble. If a man cleanses himself from the latter, he will be an instrument for noble purposes, made holy, useful to the Master and prepared to do any good work. (2 Timothy, 2:18-21)

... In later times **some will fall away from the faith, paying attention to deceitful spirits and doctrines of demons.** (1 Timothy, 4:1)

## **They Join Believers in Order to Spread Corruption**

**I know that after I leave, savage wolves will come in among you and will not spare the flock. Even from your own number men will arise and distort the truth in order to draw away disciples after them.** (Acts, 20:29)

This matter arose because some **false brothers had infiltrated our ranks to spy on the freedom we have** in Christ Jesus and **to make us slaves.** We did not give in to them for a moment, so that the truth of the Gospel might remain with you. (Galatians, 2:4-5)

But there were also false prophets among the people, **just as there will be false teachers among you. They will secretly introduce destructive heresies...** Many will follow their shameful ways and will bring the way of truth into disrepute. In their greed these teachers will exploit you with stories they have made up. Their condemnation has long been hanging over them, and their destruction has not been sleeping. (2 Peter, 2:1-3)

"Watch out for false prophets. **They come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ferocious wolves. By their fruit you will recognize them.** Do people pick grapes from

thornbushes, or figs from thistles? Likewise every good tree bears good fruit, but a bad tree bears bad fruit. A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, and a bad tree cannot bear good fruit. Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. Thus, by their fruit you will recognize them. (Matthew, 7:15 -20)

## **They Do Not Completely Renounce the Life of the Society of Ignorance**

They promise them freedom, **while they themselves are slaves of depravity**—for a man is a slave to whatever has mastered him. **If they have escaped the corruption of the world by knowing... Jesus Christ and are again entangled in it and overcome, they are worse off at the end than they were at the beginning. It would have been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than to have known it and then to turn their backs on the sacred command [God's commandments] that was passed on to them.** Of them the proverbs are true: ... **"A sow that is washed goes back to her wallowing in the mud."** ( 2 Peter, 2:19-20)

... **You must not associate with anyone who calls himself a brother but is sexually immoral or greedy, an idolater or a slanderer, a drunkard or a swindler. With such a man do not even eat.** What business is it of mine to judge those outside the church? Are you not to judge those inside? God will judge those outside. "Expel the wicked man from among you." (1 Corinthians, 5:11-13)

... They are blots and blemishes, reveling in their pleasures while they feast with you. **With eyes full of adultery, they never stop sinning;** they seduce the unstable; they are experts in greed—an accursed brood! (2 Peter, 2:13-14)

## **They are Punished in this World and the Hereafter**

... They are blots and blemishes, reveling in their pleasures while they feast with you... They have left the straight way and wandered off to follow the way of Balaam son of Beor, who loved the wages of wickedness... **These men are springs without water and mists driven by a storm. Blackest darkness is reserved for them.** (2 Peter, 2:13-17)

... These men... **are clouds without rain, blown along by the wind; autumn trees, without fruit and uprooted—twice dead.** They are wild waves of the sea, foaming up their shame; wandering stars, **for whom blackest darkness has been reserved forever.** (Jude, 1:8,12-13)

... They will secretly introduce destructive heresies... **bringing swift destruction on themselves.** Many will follow their shameful ways and will bring the way of truth into

disrepute. In their greed these teachers will exploit you with stories they have made up. **Their condemnation has long been hanging over them, and their destruction has not been sleeping.** (2 Peter, 2:1-3)

... They are like brute beasts, creatures of instinct, born only to be caught and destroyed, and **like beasts they too will perish. They will be paid back with harm for the harm they have done.** Their idea of pleasure is to carouse in broad daylight. They are blots and blemishes... (2 Peter, 2:12-13)

## STATEMENTS REGARDING CREATION IN THE GOSPEL

... **We are** bringing you good news, **telling you to turn from these worthless things to the living God, Who made heaven and earth and sea and everything in them...** He has shown kindness by giving you rain from heaven and crops in their seasons; He provides you with plenty of food and fills your hearts with joy. (Acts, 14:15-17)

... **God Who made the world and everything...** He himself gives all men life and breath and everything else. **From one man He made every nation of men, that they should inhabit the whole earth; and He determined the times set for them and the exact places where they should live.** (Acts, 17:24-26)

So it is written: "**The first man Adam became a living being**"... **The first man was of the dust of the earth...** (1 Corinthians, 15:45-47)

He also says, "**In the beginning, O Lord, You laid the foundations of the earth, and the heavens are the work of Your hands [Your creations].**" (Hebrews, 1:10)

In the Sight of **God, Who gives life to everything...** I charge you to keep these commands stainlessly and blamelessly until the appearance of ... Jesus, the Messiah. (1 Timothy, 6:13)

For every house is built by someone, but **God is the builder of everything.** (Hebrews, 3:4)

**For from Him and through Him and to Him are all things.** To Him be the glory forever! Amen. (Romans, 11:36)

For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith—and this not from yourselves, it is the gift of God—not by works, so that no one can boast. For **we are God's masterpiece... to do good works, which God prepared in advance for us to do.** (Ephesians, 2:8-10)

**He [God]... chose to give us birth through...** (James, 1:18)

**But they deliberately forget that long ago by God's word the heavens existed and the earth was formed out of water and by water.** (2 Peter, 3:5)

... **He [God] causes His sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous.** (Matthew, 5:45)

Are not two sparrows sold for a penny? Yet **not one of them will fall to the ground apart from the will of your Lord.** And even the very hairs of your head are all numbered... (Matthew, 10:29-30)

When they heard this, they raised their voices together in prayer to God. "Sovereign Lord," they said, "**you made the heaven and the earth and the sea, and everything in them.**" (Acts, 4:24)

But at the beginning of creation **God 'made them male and female.'** (Mark, 10:6)

"Haven't you read [God's revelation]," he [Jesus]," replied, "that at the beginning **God 'made them male and female.'**" (Matthew, 19:4)

... Yet for us there is but one God... **from Whom all things came** and for Whom we live; and there is but one Lord... **through Whom all things came** and through Whom we live. (1 Corinthians, 8:5-6)

For by Him all things were created: **things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible... all things were created by Him and for Him.** He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together. (Colossians, 1:16-17)

**Through Him [God] all things were made;** without Him nothing was made that has been made. (John, 1:3)

... Since what may be known about God is plain to them, **because God has made it [signs of His existence] plain to them. For since the creation of the world God's invisible qualities—His eternal power and divine nature—have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made,** so that men are without excuse. For although they knew God, they neither glorified Him as God nor gave thanks to Him, but their thinking became futile and their foolish hearts were darkened. Although they claimed to be wise, they became fools and exchanged the glory of the immortal God for images made to look like mortal man and birds and animals and reptiles. (Romans, 1:19-23)

Land that drinks in the rain often falling on it and that produces a crop useful to those for whom it is farmed **receives the blessing of God.** (Hebrews, 6:7)

## **SOME SIMILAR PASSAGES FROM THE GOSPEL AND THE QUR'AN**

### **God being the Eternal:**

**GOSPEL:** He also says, "**In the beginning, O Lord, You laid the foundations of the earth, and the heavens are the work of Your hands. They will perish, but You remain; they will all wear out like a garment. You will roll them up like a robe; like a garment they will be changed. But You remain the same, and Your years will never end.**" (Hebrews, 1:10-12)

**QURAN:** **Everyone on it will pass away; but the Face of your Lord will remain, Master of Majesty and Generosity.** (Surat ar-Rahman, 26-27)

### **God being the Creator of all things:**

**GOSPEL:** **For from Him and through Him and to Him are all things.** To Him be the glory forever! Amen. (Romans, 11:36)

**QURAN:** That is Allah, your Lord. There is no god but Him, **the Creator of everything.** So worship Him. He is responsible for everything. (Surat-al-An'am, 102)

### **God being the Giver of Form:**

**GOSPEL:** But in fact **God has arranged the parts in the body, every one of them, just as He wanted them to be.** (1 Corinthians, 12:18)

**QURAN:** It is He Who **forms you in the womb however He wills.** There is no god but Him, the Almighty, the All-Wise. (Surah Al 'Imran, 6)

### **God heeds the prayers of those who pray:**

**GOSPEL:** **Ask [from God] and it will be given to you; seek and you will find;** knock and the door will be opened to you. **For everyone who asks receives; he who seeks finds;** and to him who knocks, the door will be opened. (Matthew, 7:7-8)

**GOSPEL:** **If you believe, you will receive whatever you ask for in prayer.** (Matthew, 21:22)

**QURAN:** Your Lord says, '**Call on Me and I will answer you.** Those who who are too proud to worship Me will enter hell abject.' (Surah Ghafir, 60)



**QURAN: If My slaves ask you about Me, I am near. I answer the call of the caller when he calls on Me.** They should therefore respond to Me and believe in Me so that hopefully they will be rightly guided. (Surat al-Baqara, 186)

## **He who obeys the messenger of God obeys God Himself:**

**GOSPEL:** [Jesus:] "... **He who receives you receives me, and he who receives me receives the One [God] Who sent me.**" (Matthew, 10:40; Mark, 9:37)

**GOSPEL:** [Jesus:] "... he who rejects you rejects me; but he who rejects me rejects Him [God] Who sent me." (Luke, 10:16)

**QURAN: Whoever obeys the Messenger has obeyed Allah...** (Surat an-Nisa', 80)

**QURAN: Those who pledge you their allegiance pledge allegiance to Allah.** Allah's hand is over their hands. He who breaks his pledge only breaks it against himself. But as for him who fulfils the contract he has made with Allah, We will pay him an immense reward. (Surat al-Fath, 10)

## **Prophets do not speak of their own desires, but spread the revelation of God:**

**GOSPEL:** Jesus answered, "**My teaching is not my own. It comes from Him [God] Who sent me.**" (John, 7:16)

**GOSPEL:** So Jesus said, "... then you will know that I am the one **I claim to be and that I do nothing on my own but speak just what God has taught me.**" (John, 8:28)

**QURAN: Nor does he speak from whim. It is nothing but Revelation revealed.** (Surat al-Najm, 3-4)

**QURAN: [I am] transmitting my Lord's Message** to you and giving you good counsel, and **I know from Allah what you do not know.** (Surat al-A'raf, 62)

## **God loves those who obey His messenger:**

**GOSPEL:** Jesus replied, "**If anyone loves me, he will obey my teaching. My God will love him...** He who does not love me will not obey my teaching. These words you hear are not my own; they belong to God Who sent me." (John, 14:23-24)

**GOSPEL:** [Jesus:] "**Whoever has my commands and obeys them, he is the one who loves me. He who loves me will be loved by my God,** and I too will love him..." (John, 14:21)

**QURAN: Say, 'If you love Allah, then follow me and Allah will love you** and forgive you for

your wrong actions. Allah is Ever-Forgiving, Most Merciful.' Say, 'Obey Allah and the Messenger.' Then if they turn away, Allah does not love the unbelievers. (Surah Al 'Imran, 31-32)

## **Believers being tested by difficulties:**

**GOSPEL:** [Jesus] "... Blessed are you **when people insult you, persecute you and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of me** [for God's sake]. Rejoice and be glad, because **great is your reward in heaven [in the hereafter], for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who were before you.**" (Matthew, 5:10-12)

**GOSPEL:** ... **"We must go through many hardships to enter the kingdom of God [paradise]"** they said. (Acts, 14:22)

**QURAN:** **Or did you suppose that you would enter the Garden without facing the same as those who came before you?** Poverty and illness afflicted them and they were shaken to the point that the Messenger and those who believed with him said, 'When is Allah's help coming?' Be assured that Allah's help is very near. (Surat al-Baqara, 214)

## **Everyone being tested only as much as he can bear:**

**GOSPEL:** No temptation has seized you except what is common to man. And God is faithful; **He will not let you be tempted beyond what you can bear. But when you are tempted, He will also provide a way out so that you can stand up under it.** (1 Corinthians, 10:13)

**QURAN:** ... **We impose on no self any more than it can bear;** that you are equitable when you speak-even if a near relative is concerned; and that you fulfil Allah's contract. That is what He instructs you to do, so that hopefully you will pay heed. (Surat al-An'am, 152)

**QURAN:** ... Call two upright men from among yourselves as witnesses and they should carry out the witnessing for Allah. This is admonishment for all who believe in Allah and the Last Day. **Whoever has fear of Allah-He will give him a way out.** (Surat at-Talaq, 2)

## **Selling one's self and property for God:**

**GOSPEL:** Large crowds were traveling with Jesus, and turning to them he said: **"If people come to me and are not ready to abandon their fathers, mothers, wives, children, brothers, and sisters, as well as their own lives,** they cannot be my disciples." (Luke, 14:25-26)

**QURAN:** Say: **'If your fathers or your sons or your brothers or your wives or your tribe, or any wealth you have acquired, or any business you fear may slump, or any house which pleases you, are dearer to you than Allah and His Messenger and striving in His Way, then**

**wait until Allah brings about His command.** Allah does not guide people who are deviators.' (Surat at-Tawba, 24)

## **Faith being built on sound foundations:**

**GOSPEL:** [Jesus:] **"Therefore everyone who hears these words of mine and puts them into practice is like a wise man who built his house on the rock.** The rain came down, the streams rose, and the winds blew and beat against that house; yet it did not fall, because it had its foundation on the rock. **But everyone who hears these words of mine and does not put them into practice is like a foolish man who built his house on sand.** The rain came down, the streams rose, and the winds blew and beat against that house, and it fell with a great crash." (Matthew, 7:24-27)

**GOSPEL:** [Jesus:] **"I will show you what he is like who comes to me and hears my words and puts them into practice. He is like a man building a house, who dug down deep and laid the foundation on rock.** When a flood came, the torrent struck that house but could not shake it, because it was well built. **But the one who hears my words and does not put them into practice is like a man who built a house on the ground without a foundation.** The moment the torrent struck that house, it collapsed and its destruction was complete." (Luke, 6:47-49)

**QURAN: Who is better: someone who founds his building on fear of Allah and His good pleasure, or someone who founds his building on the brink of a crumbling precipice so that it collapses with him into the fire of hell? Allah does not love wrongdoers.** (Surat at-Tawba, 109)

## **Abundance being bestowed on those who migrate for the sake of God:**

**GOSPEL:** "I tell you the truth," **Jesus replied, "no one who has left home or brothers or sisters or mother or father or children or fields for me [for the approval of God] and the Gospel will fail to receive a hundred times as much in this present age (homes, brothers, sisters, mothers, children and fields—and with them, persecutions) and in the age to come, eternal life.** But many who are first will be last, and the last first." (Mark, 10:29-31)

**QURAN: Those who migrate in the Way of Allah will find many places of refuge on the earth and ample sustenance.** If anyone leaves his home, migrating to Allah and His Messenger, and death catches up with him, it is Allah Who will reward him. Allah is Ever-Forgiving, Most Merciful. (Surat an-Nisa, 100)

## **Not storing up possessions:**

**GOSPEL:** Do not store up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven [for the hereafter], where moth and rust do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also. (Matthew, 6:19-21)

**QURAN:** Who has amassed wealth and hoarded it! He thinks his wealth will make him live for ever. No indeed! He will be flung into the Shatterer. (Surat al-Humaza, 2-4)

## **Not making helping the poor a matter of show:**

**GOSPEL:** So when you give to the needy, do not announce it with trumpets, as the hypocrites do... to be honored by men. (Matthew, 6:2)

**QURAN:** You who believe! Do not nullify your charity by demands for gratitude or insulting words, like him who spends his wealth, showing off to people and not believing in Allah and the Last Day. His likeness is that of a smooth rock coated with soil, which, when heavy rain falls on it, is left stripped bare. They have no power over anything they have earned. Allah does not guide disbelieving people. (Surat al-Baqara, 264)

## **Believers help the poor even if they are in need themselves:**

**GOSPEL:** As he looked up, Jesus saw the rich putting their gifts into the temple treasury. He also saw a poor widow put in two very small copper coins. "I tell you the truth," he said, "this poor widow has put in more than all the others. All these people gave their gifts out of their wealth; but she out of her poverty put in all she had to live on." (Luke, 21:1-4)

**QURAN:** Those who were already settled in the abode, and in faith, before they came, love those who have migrated to them and do not find in their hearts any need for what they have been given and prefer them to themselves even if they themselves are needy. It is the people who are safe-guarded from the avarice of their own selves who are successful. (Surat al-Hashr, 9)

## **Not showing off when worshiping:**

**GOSPEL:** "And when you pray, do not be like the hypocrites, for they love to pray standing... on the street corners to be seen by men. I tell you the truth, they have received their reward in full. But when you pray, go into your room, close the door and pray to your God, Who

is unseen. Then your God, Who sees what is done in secret, will reward you. (Matthew, 6:5-6)

**QURAN:** Who are **neglectful of their prayers, Those who show off** and deny help to others... (Surat al-Ma'un, 5-6)

**QURAN:** The hypocrites think they deceive Allah, but He is deceiving them. **When they get up to pray, they get up lazily, showing off to people**, and only remembering Allah a very little. (Surat an-Nisa, 142)

## **It is fear of God that draws people close to God, not the flesh of sacrificed animals:**

**GOSPEL:** ... Some people are still so accustomed to idols that **when they eat such food they think of it as having been sacrificed to an idol**, and since their conscience is weak, it is defiled. **But food does not bring us near to God...** (1 Corinthians, 8:7-8)

**QURAN:** **Their flesh and blood does not reach Allah but** your heedfulness does reach Him. In this way He has subjected them to you so that you might proclaim Allah's greatness for the way that He has guided you. Give good news to the good-doers. (Surat al-Hajj, 37)

## **Not forgetting oneself when warning others:**

**GOSPEL:** **Why do you look at the speck of sawdust in your brother's eye and pay no attention to the plank in your own eye? How can you say to your brother, 'Let me take the speck out of your eye,' when all the time there is a plank in your own eye?** You hypocrite, first take the plank out of your own eye, and then you will see clearly to remove the speck from your brother's eye. (Matthew, 7:3-5; Luke, 6:37-42)

**GOSPEL:** Then Jesus said to the crowds and to his disciples: "... So you must obey them and do everything they tell you. But do not do what they do, **for they do not practice what they preach.**" (Matthew, 23:1-3)

**QURAN:** **Do you order people to devoutness and forget yourselves**, when you recite the Book? Will you not use your intellect? (Surat al-Baqara, 44)

## **The blinding of the eyes and ears of deniers:**

**GOSPEL:** This is why I speak to them in parables: **Though seeing, they do not see; though hearing, they do not hear or understand.** In them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah: **'You will be ever hearing but never understanding; you will be ever seeing but never perceiving. For**

**this people's heart has become calloused; they hardly hear with their ears, and they have closed their eyes.** Otherwise they might see with their eyes, hear with their ears, understand with their hearts and turn, and I would heal them. (Matthew, 13:13-15)

**GOSPEL: Do you have eyes but fail to see, and ears but fail to hear?** (Mark, 8:18-19)

**QURAN:** We created many of the jinn and mankind for hell. **They have hearts they do not understand with. They have eyes they do not see with. They have ears they do not hear with.** Such people are like cattle. No, they are even further astray! They are the unaware. (Surat-al-A'raf, 179)

**QURAN: Allah has sealed up their hearts and hearing and over their eyes is a blindfold.** They will have a terrible punishment. (Surat al-Baqara, 7)

## **Responding to evil with good:**

**GOSPEL:** [Jesus:] "But I tell you who hear me: **Love your enemies, do good to those who hate you, bless those who curse you, pray for those who mistreat you.**" (Luke, 6:27-28)

**GOSPEL: Do not repay anyone evil for evil.** Be careful to do what is right in the eyes of everybody. If it is possible, as far as it depends on you, live at peace with everyone. Do not take revenge, my friends, but leave room for God's wrath, for it is written: "It is mine to avenge; I will repay," says the Lord. On the contrary: "If your enemy is hungry, feed him; if he is thirsty, give him something to drink. In doing this, you will heap burning coals on his head. **"Do not be overcome by evil, but overcome evil with good.**" (Romans, 12:17-21)

**QURAN:** A good action and a bad action are not the same. **Repel the bad with something better** and, if there is enmity between you and someone else, he will be like a bosom friend. (Surah Fussilat, 34)

**QURAN:** They will be given their reward twice over **because they have been steadfast** and because they ward off the bad with the good and give from what we have provided for them. (Surat al-Qasas, 54)

## **Extending greetings on entering a house:**

**GOSPEL: When you enter a house, first say, 'Peace to this house.'** If a man of peace is there, your peace will rest on him; if not, it will return to you. (Luke, 10:5-6)

**QURAN:** You who believe! **Do not enter houses other than** your own until you have asked permission and **greeted their inhabitants.** That is better for you, so that hopefully you will pay heed. (Surat an-Nur, 27)

## Saying 'if God so wishes':

**GOSPEL:** Now listen, you who say, "Today or tomorrow we will go to this or that city, spend a year there, carry on business and make money." Why, you do not even know what will happen tomorrow. What is your life? You are a mist that appears for a little while and then vanishes. Instead, you ought to say, **"If it is the Lord's will, we will live and do this or that."** (James, 4:13-15)

**QURAN:** Never say about anything, 'I am doing that tomorrow,' without adding **'If Allah wills.'** Remember your Lord when you forget, and say, 'Hopefully my Lord will guide me to something closer to right guidance than this.' (Surat al-Kahf, 23-24)

## Keeping one's word:

**GOSPEL:** Again, you have heard that it was said to the people long ago, **'Do not break your oath, but keep the oaths you have made to the Lord.'** (Matthew, 5:33)

**QURAN:** **Be true to Allah's contract when you have agreed to it, and do not break your oaths** once they are confirmed and you have made Allah your guarantee. Allah knows what you do. (Surat an-Nahl, 91)

## Believers must not fall into disagreement:

**GOSPEL:** I appeal to you, brothers... **that all of you agree with one another so that there may be no divisions among you and that you may be perfectly united in mind and thought.** (1 Corinthians, 1:10-11)

**QURAN:** Obey Allah and His Messenger and **do not quarrel among yourselves** lest you lose heart and your momentum disappear. And be steadfast. Allah is with the steadfast. (Surat al-Anfal, 46)

## There is ease in religion:

**GOSPEL:** [Jesus:] **"Come to me,** all you who are weary and burdened, and **I will give you rest.** Take my yoke upon you [for the approval of God] and learn from me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, **and you will find rest for your souls. For my yoke is easy and my burden is light."** (Matthew, 11:28-30)

**QURAN:** 'But as for him who believes and acts rightly, he will receive the best of rewards and we will issue a command, **making things easy for him.'** (Surat al-Khaf, 88)

**QURAN:** Strive for Allah with the striving due to Him. He has selected you and **not placed any constraint upon you in the religion—the religion of your forefather Abraham...** (Surat al-Hajj, 78)

## **The transitory nature of the life of this world:**

**GOSPEL:** **Do not love the world or anything in the world.** If anyone loves the world, the love of God is not in him. For everything in the world—the cravings of sinful man, the lust of his eyes and the boasting of what he has and does—comes not from God but from the world. **The world and its desires pass away, but the man who does the will of God lives forever.** (1 John, 2:15-17)

**GOSPEL:** ... **Live your lives as strangers here** in reverent fear [of God]. For you know that it was not **with perishable things such as silver or gold** that you were redeemed from the empty way of life handed down to you from your forefathers. (1 Peter, 1:17-18)

**QURAN:** Allah expands provision to anyone He wills and restricts it. They rejoice **in the life of this world. Yet the life of this world, compared to the hereafter, is only fleeting enjoyment.** (Surat ar-Rad, 26)

**QURAN:** **There is the enjoyment of this world. Then they will return to Us.** Then We will let them taste the terrible punishment because they disbelieved. (Surah Yunus, 70)

## **The sharpness of sight in the hereafter:**

**GOSPEL:** **Now we see but a poor reflection as in a mirror; then [in the hereafter] we shall see face to face.** Now I know in part; then I shall know fully, even as I am fully known... (1 Corinthians, 13:12-13)

**QURAN:** [On the Day of Threat, they will be told,] 'You were heedless of this so We have stripped you of your covering **and today your sight is sharp.**' (Surah Qaf, 22)

## **The dwellers in hell ask believers for water:**

**GOSPEL:** **In hell, where he was in torment, he looked up and** saw Abraham far away [in paradise], with Lazarus by his side. So he called to him... 'Abraham, **have pity on me and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue, because I am in agony in this fire.**' (Luke, 16:23-24)

**QURAN:** **The companions of the Fire will call out to the companions of the Garden, 'Throw down some water to us or some of what Allah has given you as provision.'** They will say,



'Allah has forbidden them to the unbelievers.' (Surat al-A'raf, 50)

### **Deniers will never believe, not even if the dead speak:**

**GOSPEL:** He said to him, 'If they do not listen to Moses and the Prophets, **they will not be convinced even if someone rises from the dead.**' (Luke, 16:31)

**QURAN:** Even if We sent down angels to them, and **the dead spoke to them**, and We gathered together everything in front of them right before their eyes, **they would still not believe unless Allah willed.** The truth is that most of them are ignorant. (Surat al-An'am, 111)

### **The fate of past peoples being cited as a warning:**

**GOSPEL:** These things happened to them as examples **and were written down as warnings for us, on whom the fulfillment of the ages has come.** (1 Corinthians, 10:11)

**QURAN:** In this way We give you news of what has gone before and We have given you a reminder direct from Us. (Surah Ta Ha, 99)

### **The creation of the first human being:**

**GOSPEL:** ... From one man He [God] made every nation of men, that they should inhabit the whole earth. (Acts, 17:26)

**QURAN:** O mankind! **Have fear of your Lord Who created you from a single self and created its mate from it and then disseminated many men and women from the two of them. Have fear of Allah** in Whose name you make demands on one another and also in respect of your families. Allah watches over you continually. (Surat an-Nisa', 1)

### **One day in the Sight of God being a year:**

**GOSPEL:** But do not forget this one thing, dear friends: **With the Lord a day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years are like a day.** (2 Peter 3:8)

**QURAN:** They ask you to hasten the punishment. Allah will not break His promise. A day with **your Lord is equivalent to a thousand years in the way you count.** (Surat al-Hajj, 47)

### **Not attaching importance to line of descent:**

**GOSPEL:** As I urged you when I went into Macedonia, stay there in Ephesus so that you may command certain men not to teach false doctrines any longer **nor to devote themselves to myths**

**and endless genealogies. These promote controversies rather than God's work—which is by faith.** (1 Timothy, 1:3-4)

**QURAN:** Those who disbelieve **filled their hearts with fanatical rage-the fanatical rage of the Time of Ignorance**-and Allah sent down serenity to His Messenger and to the believers, and bound them to the expression of heedfulness which they had most right to and were most entitled to. Allah has knowledge of all things. (Surat al-Fath, 26)

## **Hypocrites' external appearance being deceptive:**

**GOSPEL:** Woe to you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, you hypocrites! **You are like whitewashed tombs, which look beautiful on the outside but on the inside are full of dead men's bones and everything unclean.** In the same way, on the outside you appear to people as righteous but on the inside you are full of hypocrisy and wickedness. (Matthew, 23:27-28)

**QURAN:** When you see them, **their outward form appeals to you, and if they speak you listen to what they say. But they are like propped-up planks of wood.** They imagine every cry to be against them. They are the enemy, so beware of them. May Allah destroy them! How they are perverted! (Surat al-Munafiqun, 4)

## **Hypocrites using their families as an excuse for not striving on the path of God:**

**GOSPEL:** Still another said, **"I will follow you... but first let me go back and say good-bye to my family."** Jesus replied, "No one who puts his hand to the plow and looks back is fit for service in the kingdom of God [His paradise]. (Luke, 9:61-62)

**GOSPEL:** Another disciple said to him [Jesus], **"... first let me go and bury my father."** But Jesus told him, "Follow me, and let the dead bury their own dead." (Matthew, 8:21-22)

**QURAN:** And a group of them said, 'People of Yathrib, Your position is untenable so return!' **some of them asked the Prophet to excuse them, saying, 'Our houses are exposed,' when they were not exposed; it was merely that they wanted to run away.** (Surat al-Ahzab, 13)

## **How hypocrites say what is not in their hearts:**

**GOSPEL:** You hypocrites! Isaiah was right when he prophesied about you: **'These people honor Me with their lips, but their hearts are far from Me.** They worship Me in vain; their teachings are but rules taught by men. (Matthew, 15:7-9; Mark, 7: 6-7)

**QURAN:** And (it is) so that He would know the hypocrites. They were told, 'Come and fight in the Way of Allah or at least help defend us.' They said, 'If we knew how to fight, we would certainly follow you.' **They were closer to disbelief that day than to faith, saying with their mouths what was not in their hearts. And Allah knows best what they are hiding.** (Surah Al 'Imran, 167)

**QURAN:** O Messenger! Do not be grieved **by those who rush headlong into disbelief among those who say 'We believe' with their tongues when their hearts contain no faith'**... (Surat al-Ma'ida, 41)

## **Those who espouse the religion of their forefathers against God's commandments:**

**GOSPEL:** ... [They] asked Jesus, "**Why don't your disciples live according to the tradition of the elders...**" He replied... **You have let go of the commands of God and are holding on to the traditions of men.**" And he said to them: "**You have a fine way of setting aside the commands of God in order to observe your own traditions!**" (Mark, 7:5-9)

**GOSPEL:** Then some... came to Jesus... and asked, "Why do your disciples break the tradition of the elders?... Jesus replied, "**And why do you break the command of God for the sake of your tradition?**" (Matthew, 15:1-3)

**QURAN:** When they are told, 'Follow what Allah has sent down to you,' **They say, 'We are following what we found our fathers doing.'** **What, even though their fathers did not understand a thing and were not guided!** (Surat al-Baqara, 170)

**QURAN:** Whenever they commit an indecent act, they say, '**We found our fathers doing it and Allah commanded us to do it too.**' Say: 'Allah does not command indecency. Do you say things about Allah you do not know?' (Surat al-A'raf, 28)

## **Believers being one another's family:**

**GOSPEL:** Someone told him, "Your mother and brothers are standing outside, wanting to speak to you." He replied to him, "Who is my mother, and who are my brothers?" Pointing to his disciples, he said, "Here are my mother and my brothers. **For whoever does the will of my God... is my brother and sister and mother.**" (Matthew, 12:47-50)

**QURAN:** Noah called out to his Lord and said, 'My Lord, my son is one of my family and Your promise is surely the truth and You are the Justest of Judges.' He said, '**Noah, he is definitely not of your family. He is someone whose action was not righteous.** Do not, therefore, ask Me for something about which you have no knowledge. I admonish you lest you should be among the ignorant.' (Surah Hud, 45-46)

## **Believers being compared to seeds sown in fertile ground:**

**GOSPEL:** "Listen then to what the parable of the sower means: When anyone hears the message about the kingdom [paradise] and does not understand it, the evil one comes and snatches away what was sown in his heart. This is the seed sown along the path. The one who received the seed that fell on rocky places is the man who hears the word and at once receives it with joy. But since he has no root, he lasts only a short time. When trouble or persecution comes because of the word, he quickly falls away. The one who received the seed that fell among the thorns is the man who hears the word, but the worries of this life and the deceitfulness of wealth choke it, making it unfruitful. **But the one who received the seed that fell on good soil is the man who hears the word and understands it. He produces a crop, yielding a hundred, sixty or thirty times what was sown.**" (Matthew, 13:18-23)

**GOSPEL:** Then Jesus said to them, "Don't you understand this parable? How then will you understand any parable? The farmer sows the word. Some people are like seed along the path, where the word is sown. As soon as they hear it, satan comes and takes away the word that was sown in them. Others, like seed sown on rocky places, hear the word and at once receive it with joy. But since they have no root, they last only a short time. When trouble or persecution comes because of the word, they quickly fall away. Still others, like seed sown among thorns, hear the word; but the worries of this life, the deceitfulness of wealth and the desires for other things come in and choke the word, making it unfruitful. **Others, like seed sown on good soil, hear the word, accept it, and produce a crop—thirty, sixty or even a hundred times what was sown.**" (Mark, 4:13-20)

**QURAN:** Muhammad is the Messenger of Allah, and those who are with him are fierce to the unbelievers, merciful to one another. You see them bowing and prostrating, seeking Allah's good favour and His pleasure. Their mark is on their faces, the traces of prostration. That is their likeness in the Torah. **And their likeness in the Gospel is that of a seed which puts up a shoot and makes it strong so that it thickens and grows up straight upon its stalk, filling the sowers with delight**—so that by them He may infuriate the unbelievers. Allah has promised those of them who believe and do right actions forgiveness and an immense reward. (Surat al-Fath, 29)

# APPENDIX

## The Deception of Evolution

Darwinism, in other words the theory of evolution, was put forward with the aim of denying the fact of Creation, but is in truth nothing but failed, unscientific nonsense. **This theory, which claims that life emerged by chance from inanimate matter, was invalidated by the scientific evidence of miraculous order in the universe and in living things, as well as by the discovery of more than 300 million fossils revealing that evolution never happened.** In this way, **science confirmed the fact that Allah created the universe and the living things in it.** The propaganda carried out today in order to keep the theory of evolution alive is based solely on the distortion of the scientific facts, biased interpretation, and lies and falsehoods disguised as science.

Yet this propaganda cannot conceal the truth. The fact that **the theory of evolution is the greatest deception in the history of science** has been expressed more and more in the scientific world over the last 20-30 years. Research carried out after the 1980s in particular has revealed that the claims of Darwinism are totally unfounded, something that has been stated by a large number of scientists. In the United States in particular, many scientists from such different fields as biology, biochemistry and paleontology recognize the invalidity of Darwinism and employ the fact of Creation to account for the origin of life.

We have examined the collapse of the theory of evolution and the proofs of Creation in great scientific detail in many of our works, and are still continuing to do so. Given the enormous importance of this subject, it will be of great benefit to summarize it here.

### The Scientific Collapse of Darwinism

As **a pagan doctrine** going back as far as ancient Greece, the theory of evolution was advanced extensively in the nineteenth century. The most important development that made it the top topic of the world of science was Charles Darwin's *The Origin of Species*, published in 1859. In this book, he opposed, in his own eyes, the fact that Allah created different living species on earth separately, for he erroneously claimed that all living beings had a common ancestor and had diversified over time through small changes. **Darwin's theory was not based on any concrete scientific finding; as he also accepted, it was just an "assumption."** Moreover, as Darwin confessed in the long chapter of his book titled "Difficulties on Theory," **the theory failed in the face of many critical questions.**

Darwin invested all of his hopes in new scientific discoveries, which he expected to solve these difficulties. However, contrary to his expectations, scientific findings expanded the dimensions of these difficulties. The defeat of Darwinism in the face of science can be reviewed under three basic topics:

- 1) The theory cannot explain how life originated on Earth.
- 2) No scientific finding shows that the "evolutionary mechanisms" proposed by the theory have any evolutionary power at all.
- 3) The fossil record proves the exact opposite of what the theory suggests.

In this section, we will examine these three basic points in general outlines:

## **The First Insurmountable Step: The Origin of Life**

The theory of evolution posits that all living species evolved from a single living cell that emerged on Earth 3.8 billion years ago, supposed to have happened as a result of coincidences. How a single cell could generate millions of complex living species and, if such an evolution really occurred, why traces of it cannot be observed in the fossil record are some of the questions that the theory cannot answer. However, first and foremost, we need to ask: **How did this "first cell" originate?**

**Since the theory of evolution ignorantly denies Creation, it maintains that the "first cell" originated as a product of blind coincidences within the laws of nature, without any plan or arrangement.** According to the theory, inanimate matter must have produced a living cell as a result of coincidences. Such a claim, however, is inconsistent with the most unassailable rules of biology.

## **"Life Comes From Life"**

In his book, Darwin never referred to the origin of life. The primitive understanding of science in his time rested on the assumption that living beings had a very simple structure. Since medieval times, spontaneous generation, which asserts that non-living materials came together to form living organisms, had been widely accepted. It was commonly believed that insects came into being from food leftovers, and mice from wheat. Interesting experiments were conducted to prove this theory. Some wheat was placed on a dirty piece of cloth, and it was believed that mice would originate from it after a while.

Similarly, maggots developing in rotting meat was assumed to be evidence of spontaneous generation. However, **it was later understood that worms did not appear on meat spontaneously, but were carried there by flies in the form of larvae, invisible to the naked eye.**

Even when Darwin wrote *The Origin of Species*, the belief that bacteria could come into existence from non-living matter was widely accepted in the world of science.

However, **five years after the publication of Darwin's book, Louis Pasteur announced his results after long studies and experiments, that disproved**

**spontaneous generation, a cornerstone of Darwin's theory.** In his triumphal lecture at the Sorbonne in 1864, Pasteur said: "**Never will the doctrine of spontaneous generation recover from the mortal blow struck by this simple experiment.**"<sup>1</sup>

For a long time, advocates of the theory of evolution resisted these findings. However, as the development of science unraveled the complex structure of the cell of a living being, the idea that life could come into being coincidentally faced an even greater impasse.

## **Inconclusive Efforts of the Twentieth Century**

The first evolutionist who took up the subject of the origin of life in the twentieth century was the renowned Russian biologist Alexander Oparin. With various theses he advanced in the 1930s, he tried to prove that a living cell could originate by coincidence. These studies, however, were doomed to failure, and Oparin had to make the following confession:

Unfortunately, however, the problem of the origin of the cell is perhaps the most obscure point in the whole study of the evolution of organisms.<sup>2</sup>

Evolutionist followers of Oparin tried to carry out experiments to solve this problem. The best known experiment was carried out by the American chemist Stanley Miller in 1953. Combining the gases he alleged to have existed in the primordial Earth's atmosphere in an experiment set-up, and adding energy to the mixture, Miller synthesized several organic molecules (amino acids) present in the structure of proteins.

Barely a few years had passed before it was revealed that **this experiment, which was then presented as an important step in the name of evolution, was invalid, for the atmosphere used in the experiment was very different from the real Earth conditions.**<sup>3</sup>

After a long silence, **Miller confessed that the atmosphere medium he used was unrealistic.**<sup>4</sup>

**All the evolutionists' efforts throughout the twentieth century to explain the origin of life ended in failure.** The geochemist Jeffrey Bada, from the San Diego Scripps Institute accepts this fact in an article published in *Earth* magazine in 1998:

Today as we leave the twentieth century, we still face the biggest unsolved problem that we had when we entered the twentieth century: How did life originate on Earth?<sup>5</sup>

## **The Complex Structure of Life**

The primary reason why evolutionists ended up in such a great impasse regarding the origin of life is that even those living organisms Darwinists deemed to be the simplest have outstandingly complex features. The cell of a living thing is more complex than all of our man-made technological products.

**Today, even in the most developed laboratories of the world, no single protein of the cell, let alone a living cell itself, can be produced by bringing organic chemicals together.**

The conditions required for the formation of a cell are too great in quantity to be explained away by coincidences. However, there is no need to explain the situation with these details. Evolutionists are at a dead-end even before reaching the stage of the cell. That is because the probability of just a single protein, an essential building block of the cell, coming into being by chance is mathematically "0."

**The main reason for this is the need for other proteins to be present if one protein is to form, and this completely eradicates the possibility of chance formation. This fact by itself is sufficient to eliminate the evolutionist claim of chance right from the outset. To summarize,**

- 1. Protein cannot be synthesized without enzymes, and enzymes are all proteins.**
- 2. Around 100 proteins need to be present in order for a single protein to be synthesized. There therefore need to be proteins for proteins to exist.**
- 3. DNA manufactures the protein-synthesizing enzymes. Protein cannot be synthesized without DNA. DNA is therefore also needed in order for proteins to form.**
- 4. All the organelles in the cell have important tasks in protein synthesis. In other words, in order for proteins to form a perfect and fully functioning cell needs to exist together with all its organelles.**

The DNA molecule, which is located in the nucleus of a cell and which stores genetic information, is a magnificent databank. If the information coded in DNA were written down, it would make a giant library consisting of an estimated 900 volumes of encyclopedias consisting of 500 pages each.

A very interesting dilemma emerges at this point: DNA can replicate itself only with the help of some specialized proteins (enzymes). However, the synthesis of these enzymes can be realized only by the information coded in DNA. As they both depend on each other, they have to exist at the same time for replication. This brings the scenario that life originated by itself to a deadlock. Prof. Leslie Orgel, an evolutionist of repute from the University of San Diego, California, confesses this fact in the September 1994 issue of the *Scientific American* magazine:

**It is extremely improbable that proteins and nucleic acids, both of which are structurally complex, arose spontaneously in the same place at the same time. Yet it also seems impossible to have one without the other. And so, at first glance, one might have to conclude that life could never, in fact, have originated by chemical means.<sup>6</sup>**

No doubt, if it is impossible for life to have originated spontaneously as a result of blind coincidences, then it has to be accepted that life was **created**. This fact explicitly invalidates the theory of evolution, whose main purpose is to deny Creation.



## Imaginary Mechanism of Evolution

The second important point that negates Darwin's theory is that both concepts put forward by the theory as "evolutionary mechanisms" were understood to have, in reality, no evolutionary power.

Darwin based his evolution allegation entirely on the mechanism of "natural selection." The importance he placed on this mechanism was evident in the name of his book: *The Origin of Species, By Means of Natural Selection...*

Natural selection holds that those living things that are stronger and more suited to the natural conditions of their habitats will survive in the struggle for life. For example, in a deer herd under the threat of attack by wild animals, those that can run faster will survive. Therefore, the deer herd will be comprised of faster and stronger individuals. However, unquestionably, this mechanism will not cause deer to evolve and transform themselves into another living species, for instance, horses.

Therefore, **the mechanism of natural selection has no evolutionary power. Darwin was also aware of this fact** and had to state this in his book *The Origin of Species*:

Natural selection can do nothing until favourable individual differences or variations occur.<sup>7</sup>

## Lamarck's Impact

So, how could these "favorable variations" occur? Darwin tried to answer this question from the standpoint of the primitive understanding of science at that time. According to the French biologist Chevalier de Lamarck (1744-1829), who lived before Darwin, living creatures passed on the traits they acquired during their lifetime to the next generation. He asserted that these traits, which accumulated from one generation to another, caused new species to be formed. For instance, he claimed that giraffes evolved from antelopes; as they struggled to eat the leaves of high trees, their necks were extended from generation to generation.

Darwin also gave similar examples. In his book *The Origin of Species*, for instance, he said that some bears going into water to find food transformed themselves into whales over time.<sup>8</sup>

However, the laws of inheritance discovered by Gregor Mendel (1822-84) and verified by the science of genetics, which flourished in the twentieth century, utterly demolished the legend that acquired traits were passed on to subsequent generations. Thus, natural selection fell out of favor as an evolutionary mechanism.

## Neo-Darwinism and Mutations

In order to find a solution, Darwinists advanced the "Modern Synthetic Theory," or as it is more commonly known, Neo-Darwinism, at the end of the 1930s. Neo-Darwinism added mutations, which are distortions formed in the genes of living beings due to such external factors as radiation or replication errors, as the "cause of favorable variations" in addition to natural mutation.

Today, the model that Darwinists espouse, despite their own awareness of its scientific invalidity, is neo-Darwinism. The theory maintains that millions of living beings formed as a result of a process whereby numerous complex organs of these organisms (e.g., ears, eyes, lungs, and wings) underwent "mutations," that is, genetic disorders. Yet, there is an outright scientific fact that totally undermines this theory: **Mutations do not cause living beings to develop; on the contrary, they are always harmful.**

The reason for this is very simple: **DNA has a very complex structure, and random effects can only harm it.** The American geneticist B. G. Ranganathan explains this as follows:

First, genuine mutations are very rare in nature. Secondly, most mutations are harmful since they are random, rather than orderly changes in the structure of genes; any random change in a highly ordered system will be for **the worse, not for the better. For example, if an earthquake were to shake a highly ordered structure such as a building, there would be a random change in the framework of the building which, in all probability, would not be an improvement.**<sup>9</sup>

Not surprisingly, no mutation example, which is useful, that is, which is observed to develop the genetic code, has been observed so far. All mutations have proved to be harmful. It was understood that mutation, which is presented as an "evolutionary mechanism," is actually a genetic occurrence that harms living things, and leaves them disabled. (The most common effect of mutation on human beings is cancer.) Of course, a destructive mechanism cannot be an "evolutionary mechanism." Natural selection, on the other hand, "can do nothing by itself," as Darwin also accepted. This fact shows us that **there is no "evolutionary mechanism" in nature.** Since no evolutionary mechanism exists, no such imaginary process called "evolution" could have taken place.

## **The Fossil Record: No Sign of Intermediate Forms**

The clearest evidence that the scenario suggested by the theory of evolution did not take place is the fossil record.

According to the unscientific supposition of this theory, every living species has sprung from a predecessor. A previously existing species turned into something else over time and all species have come into being in this way. In other words, this transformation proceeds gradually over millions of years.

Had this been the case, numerous intermediary species should have existed and lived within this long transformation period.

For instance, some half-fish/half-reptiles should have lived in the past which had acquired some reptilian traits in addition to the fish traits they already had. Or there should have existed some reptile-birds, which acquired some bird traits in addition to the reptilian traits they already had. Since these would be in a transitional phase, they should be disabled, defective, crippled living beings. Evolutionists refer to these imaginary creatures, which they believe to have lived in the past, as

"transitional forms."

**If such animals ever really existed, there should be millions and even billions of them in number and variety. More importantly, the remains of these strange creatures should be present in the fossil record.** In *The Origin of Species*, Darwin explained:

If my theory be true, numberless intermediate varieties, linking most closely all of the species of the same group together must assuredly have existed... Consequently, evidence of their former existence could be found only amongst fossil remains.<sup>10</sup>

However, **Darwin was well aware that no fossils of these intermediate forms had yet been found.** He regarded this as a major difficulty for his theory. In one chapter of his book titled "Difficulties on Theory," he wrote:

Why, if species have descended from other species by insensibly fine gradations, **do we not everywhere see innumerable transitional forms? Why is not all nature in confusion instead of the species being, as we see them, well defined?...** But, as by this theory innumerable transitional forms must have existed, why do we not find them embedded in countless numbers in the crust of the earth?... Why then is not every geological formation and every stratum full of such intermediate links?<sup>11</sup>

## Darwin's Hopes Shattered

However, although evolutionists have been making strenuous efforts to find fossils since the middle of the nineteenth century all over the world, **no transitional forms have yet been uncovered.** All of the fossils, contrary to the evolutionists' expectations, show that **life appeared on Earth all of a sudden and fully-formed.**

One famous British paleontologist, Derek V. Ager, admits this fact, even though he is an evolutionist:

The point emerges that if we examine the fossil record in detail, whether at the level of orders or of species, **we find-over and over again-not gradual evolution, but the sudden explosion of one group at the expense of another.**<sup>12</sup>

This means that in **the fossil record, all living species suddenly emerge as fully formed, without any intermediate forms in between.** This is just the opposite of Darwin's assumptions. Also, this is very strong evidence that **all living things are created.** The only explanation of a living species emerging suddenly and complete in every detail without any evolutionary ancestor is that it was created. This fact is admitted also by the widely known evolutionist biologist Douglas Futuyma:

Creation and evolution, between them, exhaust the possible explanations for the origin of living things. Organisms either appeared on the earth fully developed or they did not. If they did not, they must have developed from pre-existing species by some process of modification. If they did appear in a fully developed state, they must indeed have been created by some omnipotent intelligence.<sup>13</sup>

**Fossils show that living beings emerged fully developed and in a perfect state on the Earth.** That means that "the origin of species," contrary to Darwin's supposition, is not evolution, but **Creation.**

## **The Tale of Human Evolution**

The subject most often brought up by advocates of the theory of evolution is the subject of the origin of man. The Darwinist claim holds that man evolved from so-called ape-like creatures. During this alleged evolutionary process, which is supposed to have started 4-5 million years ago, some "transitional forms" between man and his imaginary ancestors are supposed to have existed. According to this completely imaginary scenario, four basic "categories" are listed:

1. Australopithecus
2. Homo habilis
3. Homo erectus
4. Homo sapiens

Evolutionists call man's so-called first ape-like ancestors Australopithecus, which means "South African ape." These living beings are actually nothing but an old ape species that has become extinct. Extensive research done on various Australopithecus specimens by two world famous anatomists from England and the USA, namely, Lord Solly Zuckerman and Prof. Charles Oxnard, shows that these apes belonged to an ordinary ape species that became extinct and bore no resemblance to humans.<sup>14</sup>

Evolutionists classify the next stage of human evolution as "homo," that is "man." According to their claim, the living beings in the Homo series are more developed than Australopithecus. Evolutionists devise a fanciful evolution scheme by arranging different fossils of these creatures in a particular order. This scheme is imaginary because it has never been proved that there is an evolutionary relation between these different classes. Ernst Mayr, one of the twentieth century's most important evolutionists, contends in his book *One Long Argument* that "particularly historical [puzzles] such as the origin of life or of Homo sapiens, are extremely difficult and may even resist a final, satisfying explanation."<sup>15</sup>

By outlining the link chain as Australopithecus > Homo habilis > Homo erectus > Homo sapiens, evolutionists imply that each of these species is one another's ancestor. However, recent findings of paleoanthropologists have revealed that Australopithecus, Homo habilis, and Homo erectus lived at different parts of the world at the same time.<sup>16</sup>

Moreover, a certain segment of humans classified as Homo erectus have lived up until very modern times. **Homo sapiens neandarthals and Homo sapiens sapiens (man) co-existed in the same region.**<sup>17</sup>

This situation apparently indicates the invalidity of the claim that they are ancestors of one another. The late Stephen Jay Gould explained this deadlock of the theory of

evolution although he was himself one of the leading advocates of evolution in the twentieth century:

What has become of our ladder if there are three coexisting lineages of hominids (A. africanus, the robust australopithecines, and H. habilis), none clearly derived from another? Moreover, none of the three display any evolutionary trends during their tenure on earth.<sup>18</sup>

Put briefly, the scenario of human evolution, which is "upheld" with the help of various drawings of some "half ape, half human" creatures appearing in the media and course books, that is, frankly, by means of propaganda, is nothing but **a tale with no scientific foundation.**

Lord Solly Zuckerman, one of the most famous and respected scientists in the U.K., who carried out research on this subject for years and studied Australopithecus fossils for 15 years, finally concluded, despite being an evolutionist himself, **that there is, in fact, no such family tree branching out from ape-like creatures to man.**

Zuckerman also made an interesting "spectrum of science" ranging from those he considered scientific to those he considered unscientific. According to Zuckerman's spectrum, the most "scientific"-that is, depending on concrete data-fields of science are chemistry and physics. After them come the biological sciences and then the social sciences. At the far end of the spectrum, which is the part considered to be most "unscientific," are "extra-sensory perception"-concepts such as telepathy and sixth sense-and finally "human evolution." Zuckerman explains his reasoning:

We then move right off the register of objective truth into those fields of presumed biological science, like extrasensory perception or the interpretation of man's fossil history, where to the faithful [evolutionist] anything is possible - and where the ardent believer [in evolution] is sometimes able to believe several contradictory things at the same time.<sup>19</sup>

**The tale of human evolution** boils down to nothing but the prejudiced interpretations of some fossils unearthed by certain people, who blindly adhere to their theory.

## Darwinian Formula!

Besides all the technical evidence we have dealt with so far, let us now for once, examine what kind of a superstition the evolutionists have with an example so simple as to be understood even by children:

The theory of evolution asserts that life is formed by chance. According to this irrational claim, lifeless and unconscious atoms came together to form the cell and then they somehow formed other living things, including man. Let us think about that. When we bring together the elements that are the building-blocks of life such as carbon, phosphorus, nitrogen and potassium, only a heap is formed. No matter what treatments it undergoes, this atomic heap cannot form even a single living being. If you like, let us formulate an "experiment" on this subject and let us examine on the behalf of evolutionists what they really claim without pronouncing loudly under the name "Darwinian formula":

Let evolutionists put plenty of materials present in the composition of living things such as phosphorus, nitrogen, carbon, oxygen, iron, and magnesium into big barrels. Moreover, let them add in these barrels any material that does not exist under normal conditions, but they think as necessary. Let them add in this mixture as many amino acids and as many proteins as they like. Let them expose these mixtures to as much heat and moisture as they like. Let them stir these with whatever technologically developed device they like. Let them put the foremost scientists beside these barrels. Let these experts wait in turn beside these barrels for billions, and even trillions of years. Let them be free to use all kinds of conditions they believe to be necessary for a human's formation. **No matter what they do, they cannot produce from these barrels a human, say a professor that examines his cell structure under the electron microscope.** They cannot produce giraffes, lions, bees, canaries, horses, dolphins, roses, orchids, lilies, carnations, bananas, oranges, apples, dates, tomatoes, melons, watermelons, figs, olives, grapes, peaches, peafowls, pheasants, multicolored butterflies, or millions of other living beings such as these. Indeed, they could not obtain even a single cell of any one of them.

Briefly, **unconscious atoms cannot form the cell** by coming together. They cannot take a new decision and divide this cell into two, then take other decisions and create the professors who first invent the electron microscope and then examine their own cell structure under that microscope. **Matter is an unconscious, lifeless heap, and it comes to life with Allah's superior Creation.**

The theory of evolution, which claims the opposite, is a total fallacy completely contrary to reason. Thinking even a little bit on the claims of evolutionists discloses this reality, just as in the above example.

## Technology in the Eye and the Ear

Another subject that remains unanswered by evolutionary theory is the excellent quality of perception in the eye and the ear.

Before passing on to the subject of the eye, let us briefly answer the question of how we see. Light rays coming from an object fall oppositely on the eye's retina. Here, these light rays are transmitted into electric signals by cells and reach a tiny spot at the back of the brain, the "center of vision." These electric signals are perceived in this center as an image after a series of processes. With this technical background, let us do some thinking.

**The brain is insulated from light.** That means that its inside is completely dark, and that no light reaches the place where it is located. Thus, the "center of vision" is never touched by light and may even be the darkest place you have ever known. However, you observe a luminous, bright world in this pitch darkness.

**The image formed in the eye is so sharp and distinct that even the technology of the twentieth century has not been able to attain it.** For instance, look at the book you are reading, your hands with which you are holding it, and then lift your head and look around you. Have you ever

seen such a sharp and distinct image as this one at any other place? Even the most developed television screen produced by the greatest television producer in the world cannot provide such a sharp image for you. This is a three-dimensional, colored, and extremely sharp image. For more than 100 years, thousands of engineers have been trying to achieve this sharpness. Factories, huge premises were established, much research has been done and plans have been made for this purpose. Again, look at a TV screen and the book you hold in your hands. You will see that there is a big difference in sharpness and distinction. Moreover, the TV screen shows you a two-dimensional image, whereas with your eyes, you watch a three-dimensional perspective with depth.

For many years, tens of thousands of engineers have tried to make a three-dimensional TV and achieve the vision quality of the eye. Yes, they have made a three-dimensional television system, but it is not possible to watch it without putting on special 3-D glasses; moreover, it is only an artificial three-dimension. The background is more blurred, the foreground appears like a paper setting. Never has it been possible to produce a sharp and distinct vision like that of the eye. In both the camera and the television, there is a loss of image quality.

Evolutionists claim that the mechanism producing this sharp and distinct image has been formed by chance. Now, if somebody told you that the television in your room was formed as a result of chance, that all of its atoms just happened to come together and make up this device that produces an image, what would you think? How can atoms do what thousands of people cannot?

If a device producing a more primitive image than **the eye could not have been formed by chance**, then it is very evident that the eye and the image seen by the eye could not have been formed by chance. The same situation applies to the ear. The outer ear picks up the available sounds by the auricle and directs them to the middle ear, the middle ear transmits the sound vibrations by intensifying them, and the inner ear sends these vibrations to the brain by translating them into electric signals. Just as with the eye, the act of hearing finalizes in the center of hearing in the brain.

The situation in the eye is also true for the ear. That is, **the brain is insulated from sound** just as it is from light. It does not let any sound in. Therefore, no matter how noisy is the outside, the inside of the brain is completely silent. Nevertheless, the sharpest sounds are perceived in the brain. **In your completely silent brain, you listen to symphonies, and hear all of the noises in a crowded place.** However, were the sound level in your brain measured by a precise device at that moment, complete silence would be found to be prevailing there.

As is the case with imagery, decades of effort have been spent in trying to generate and reproduce sound that is faithful to the original. The results of these efforts are sound recorders, high-fidelity systems, and systems for sensing sound. Despite all of this technology and the thousands of engineers and experts who have been working on this endeavor, no sound has yet been obtained that has the same sharpness and clarity as the sound perceived by the ear. Think of the highest-quality hi-fi systems produced by the largest company in the music industry. Even in these devices, when sound is recorded some of it is lost; or when you turn on a hi-fi you always hear a hissing sound before the music starts. However, the sounds that are the products of the human body's technology are extremely sharp and clear. A human ear never perceives a sound accompanied by a hissing

sound or with atmospherics as does a hi-fi; rather, it perceives sound exactly as it is, sharp and clear. This is the way it has been since **the Creation of man**.

So far, no man-made visual or recording apparatus has been as sensitive and successful in perceiving sensory data as are the eye and the ear. However, as far as seeing and hearing are concerned, a far greater truth lies beyond all this.

## **To Whom Does the Consciousness that Sees and Hears within the Brain Belong?**

Who watches an alluring world in the brain, listens to symphonies and the twittering of birds, and smells the rose?

The stimulations coming from a person's eyes, ears, and nose travel to the brain as electro-chemical nerve impulses. In biology, physiology, and biochemistry books, you can find many details about how this image forms in the brain. However, you will never come across the most important fact: Who perceives these electro-chemical nerve impulses as images, sounds, odors, and sensory events in the brain? **There is a consciousness in the brain that perceives all this without feeling any need for an eye, an ear, and a nose.** To whom does this consciousness belong? Of course it does not belong to the nerves, the fat layer, and neurons comprising the brain. This is why Darwinist-materialists, who believe that everything is comprised of matter, cannot answer these questions.

For **this consciousness is the spirit created by Allah**, which needs neither the eye to watch the images nor the ear to hear the sounds. Furthermore, it does not need the brain to think.

Everyone who reads this explicit and scientific fact should ponder on Almighty Allah, and fear and seek refuge in Him, for He squeezes the entire universe in a pitch-dark place of a few cubic centimeters in a three-dimensional, colored, shadowy, and luminous form.

## **A Materialist Faith**

The information we have presented so far shows us that **the theory of evolution is incompatible with scientific findings**. The theory's claim regarding the origin of life is inconsistent with science, the evolutionary mechanisms it proposes have no evolutionary power, and fossils demonstrate that **the required intermediate forms have never existed**. So, it certainly follows that the theory of evolution should be pushed aside as an unscientific idea. This is how many ideas, such as the Earth-centered universe model, have been taken out of the agenda of science throughout history.

However, the theory of evolution is kept on the agenda of science. Some people even try to represent criticisms directed against it as an "attack on science." Why?

The reason is that this theory is an indispensable dogmatic belief for some circles. These circles are **blindly devoted to** materialist philosophy and adopt Darwinism because it is the only materialist



explanation that can be put forward to explain the workings of nature.

Interestingly enough, they also confess this fact from time to time. A well-known geneticist and an outspoken evolutionist, Richard C. Lewontin from Harvard University, confesses that he is "first and foremost a materialist and then a scientist":

It is not that the methods and institutions of science somehow compel us accept a material explanation of the phenomenal world, but, on the contrary, that we are forced by our a priori adherence to material causes to create an apparatus of investigation and a set of concepts that produce material explanations, no matter how counter-intuitive, no matter how mystifying to the uninitiated. Moreover, that materialism is absolute, so we cannot allow a Divine [intervention]...<sup>20</sup>

These are explicit statements that **Darwinism is a dogma** kept alive just for the sake of adherence to materialism. This dogma maintains that there is no being save matter. Therefore, it argues that inanimate, unconscious matter brought life into being. It insists that millions of different living species (e.g., birds, fish, giraffes, tigers, insects, trees, flowers, whales, and human beings) originated as a result of the interactions between matter such as pouring rain, lightning flashes, and so on, out of inanimate matter. This is a precept contrary both to reason and science. Yet Darwinists continue to ignorantly defend it just so as not to acknowledge, in their own eyes, the evident existence of Allah.

Anyone who does not look at the origin of living beings with a materialist prejudice sees this evident truth: **All living beings are works of a Creator**, Who is All-Powerful, All-Wise, and All-Knowing. **This Creator is Allah**, Who created the whole universe from non-existence, in the most perfect form, and fashioned all living beings.

## **The Theory of Evolution: The Most Potent Spell in the World**

Anyone free of prejudice and the influence of any particular ideology, who uses only his or her reason and logic, will clearly understand that belief in the theory of evolution, which brings to mind the superstitions of societies with no knowledge of science or civilization, is quite impossible.

As explained above, those who believe in the theory of evolution think that a few atoms and molecules thrown into a huge vat could produce thinking, reasoning professors and university students; such scientists as Einstein and Galileo; such artists as Humphrey Bogart, Frank Sinatra and Luciano Pavarotti; as well as antelopes, lemon trees, and carnations. Moreover, as the scientists and professors who believe in this nonsense are educated people, it is quite justifiable to speak of this theory as "the most potent spell in history." Never before has any other belief or idea so taken away peoples' powers of reason, refused to allow them to think intelligently and logically, and hidden the truth from them as if they had been blindfolded. This is an even worse and unbelievable blindness than the totem worship in some parts of Africa, the people of Saba worshipping the Sun, the tribe of the

Prophet Abraham (as) worshipping idols they had made with their own hands, or some among the people of the Prophet Moses (as) worshipping the Golden Calf.

In fact, Allah has pointed to this lack of reason in the Qur'an. In many verses, He reveals that some peoples' minds will be closed and that they will be powerless to see the truth. Some of these verses are as follows:

**As for those who do not believe, it makes no difference to them whether you warn them or do not warn them, they will not believe. Allah has sealed up their hearts and hearing and over their eyes is a blindfold. They will have a terrible punishment. (Surat al-Baqara: 6-7)**

**... They have hearts with which they do not understand. They have eyes with which they do not see. They have ears with which they do not hear. Such people are like cattle. No, they are even further astray! They are the unaware. (Surat al-A'raf: 179)**

**Even if We opened up to them a door into heaven, and they spent the day ascending through it, they would only say: "Our eyesight is befuddled! Or rather we have been put under a spell!" (Surat al-Hijr: 14-15)**

Words cannot express just how astonishing it is that this spell should hold such a wide community in thrall, keep people from the truth, and not be broken for 150 years. It is understandable that one or a few people might believe in impossible scenarios and claims full of stupidity and illogicality. However, "magic" is the only possible explanation for people from all over the world believing that unconscious and lifeless atoms suddenly decided to come together and form a universe that functions with a flawless system of organization, discipline, reason, and consciousness; a planet named Earth with all of its features so perfectly suited to life; and living things full of countless complex systems.

In fact, in the Qur'an Allah relates the incident of the Prophet Moses (as) and Pharaoh to show that some people who support atheistic philosophies actually influence others by magic. When Pharaoh was told about the true religion, he told the Prophet Moses (as) to meet with his own magicians. When the Prophet Moses (as) did so, he told them to demonstrate their abilities first. The verses continue:

**He said: "You throw." And when they threw, they cast a spell on the people's eyes and caused them to feel great fear of them. They produced an extremely powerful magic. (Surat al-A'raf, 116)**

As we have seen, Pharaoh's magicians were able to deceive everyone, apart from the Prophet Moses (as) and those who believed in him. However, his evidence broke the spell, or "swallowed up what they had forged," as revealed in the verse:

**We revealed to Moses: "Throw down your staff." And it immediately swallowed up what they had forged. So the Truth took place and what they did was shown to be false. (Surat al-A'raf, 117-118)**

As we can see, when people realized that a spell had been cast upon them and that what they saw

was just an illusion, Pharaoh's magicians lost all credibility. In the present day too, unless those who, under the influence of a similar spell, believe in these ridiculous claims under their scientific disguise and spend their lives defending them, abandon their superstitious beliefs, they also will be humiliated when the full truth emerges and the spell is broken. In fact, world-renowned British writer and philosopher Malcolm Muggeridge, who was an atheist defending evolution for some 60 years, but who subsequently realized the truth, reveals the position in which the theory of evolution would find itself in the near future in these terms:

I myself am convinced that the theory of evolution, especially the extent to which it's been applied , **will be one of the great jokes in the history books in the future**. Posterity will marvel that so very flimsy and dubious an hypothesis could be accepted with the incredible credulity that it has.<sup>21</sup>

That future is not far off: On the contrary, people will soon see that "chance" is not a deity, and will look back on **the theory of evolution as the worst deceit and the most terrible spell in the world**. That spell is already rapidly beginning to be lifted from the shoulders of people all over the world. Many people who see its true face are wondering with amazement how they could ever have been taken in by it.

**They said, "Glory be to You! We have no knowledge except what  
You have taught us. You are the All-Knowing, the All-Wise."**

**(Surat al-Baqara, 32)**

# NOTES:

1. Sidney Fox, Klaus Dose, *Molecular Evolution and The Origin of Life*, W. H. Freeman and Company, San Francisco, 1972, p. 4.
2. Alexander I. Oparin, *Origin of Life*, Dover Publications, New York, 1936, 1953 (reprint), p. 196.
3. "New Evidence on Evolution of Early Atmosphere and Life," *Bulletin of the American Meteorological Society*, vol 63, November 1982, 1328-1330.
4. Stanley Miller, *Molecular Evolution of Life: Current Status of the Prebiotic Synthesis of Small Molecules*, 1986, p. 7.
5. Jeffrey Bada, *Earth*, February 1998, p. 40.
6. Leslie E. Orgel, "The Origin of Life on Earth," *Scientific American*, vol. 271, October 1994, p. 78.
7. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection*, The Modern Library, New York, p. 127.
8. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species: A Facsimile of the First Edition*, Harvard University Press, 1964, p. 184.
9. B. G. Ranganathan, *Origins?*, Pennsylvania: The Banner of Truth Trust, 1988, p. 7.
10. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species: A Facsimile of the First Edition*, p. 179.
11. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species*, p. 172.
12. Derek A. Ager, "The Nature of the Fossil Record," *Proceedings of the British Geological Association*, vol 87, 1976, p. 133.
13. Douglas J. Futuyma, *Science on Trial*, Pantheon Books, New York, 1983, p. 197.
14. Solly Zuckerman, *Beyond The Ivory Tower*, Toplinger Publications, New York, 1970, 75-14; Charles E. Oxnard, "The Place of Australopithecines in Human Evolution: Grounds for Doubt", *Nature*, vol 258, 389.
15. "Could science be brought to an end by scientists' belief that they have final answers or by society's reluctance to pay the bills?" *Scientific American*, December 1992, p. 20.
16. Alan Walker, *Science*, vol. 207, 7 March 1980, p. 1103; A. J. Kelso, *Physical Anthropology*, 1st ed., J. B. Lipincott Co., New York, 1970, p. 221; M. D. Leakey, *Olduvai Gorge*, vol. 3, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1971, p. 272.
17. Jeffrey Kluger, "Not So Extinct After All: The Primitive Homo Erectus May Have Survived Long Enough To Coexist With Modern Humans," *Time*, 23 December 1996.
18. S. J. Gould, *Natural History*, vol. 85, 1976, p. 30.
19. Solly Zuckerman, *Beyond The Ivory Tower*, p. 19.
20. Richard Lewontin, "The Demon-Haunted World," *The New York Review of Books*, January 9, 1997, p. 28.
21. Malcolm Muggeridge, *The End of Christendom*, Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1980, p. 43.

# CAPTURE

456

Charles Darwin

458

The French biologist Louis Pasteur

469

Russian biologist Alexander Oparin

460

Stanley Miller

463

Natural selection only selects out the disfigured, weak, or unfit individuals of a species. It cannot produce new species, new genetic information, or new organs.

464

French biologist Lamarck put forward a very unreasonable claim that giraffes evolved from antelopes. In fact, God created giraffes specially just like all other living things.

466

Since the beginning of the twentieth century, evolutionary biologists have sought examples of beneficial mutations by creating mutant flies. But these efforts have always resulted in sick and deformed creatures. The top picture shows the head of a normal fruit fly, and the picture on the left shows the head of a fruit fly with legs coming out of it, the result of mutation.

Antenne

Eye

Lef

Mouth

468-469

## LIVING FOSSILS REFUTE EVOLUTION

Fossils are proof that evolution never happened. As the fossil record reveals, living things suddenly appeared together with all the characteristics they possess, and they never undergo the slightest change so long as they remain in existence. Fish have always existed as fish, insects as insects, and reptiles as reptiles. There is no scientific validity to the claim that species emerged gradually.

Sea Urchin

Period: Paleozoic Age, Carboniferous Period

**Age: 295 million years**

**Sun Fish**

**Period: Cenozoic Age, Eocene Period**

**Age: 54-37 million years**

**Crane Fly**

**Period: Cenozoic Age, Eocene Period**

**Age: 48-37 million years**

**Starfish**

**Period: Paleozoic Age, Ordovician Period**

**Age: 490-443 million years**

**Birch Tree Leaf**

**Period: Cenozoic Age, Eocene Period**

**Age: 50 million years**

**Cicada**

**Period: Mesozoic Age, Cretaceous Period**

**Age: 125 million years**

**Sequoia Leaf**

**Period: Cenozoic Age, Eocene Period**

**Age: 50 million years**

**474**

Evolutionist newspapers and magazines often print pictures of primitive man. The only available source for these pictures is the imagination of the artist. Evolutionary theory has been so dented by scientific data that today we see less and less of it in the serious press.

**FALSE**

**478**

**All its components need to function together and perfectly if the eye is to see at all.**

**479**

**The brain admits no light nor sound. Therefore, no matter how loud a sound may be, the inside of the brain is still silent. Yet there is a consciousness in that silence that interprets electrical signals as lovely music, a friend's voice or the ringing of a telephone. This consciousness is the soul.**

The inside of the brain is pitch-black. No light can enter the brain.

No sound can enter the brain.